

1424 - Q 15

MODERN VOYAGES.

VOLUME II.

Price Six Shillings, sewed.

MODERN VOYAGES.

VOLUME II.

LONDON: J. JOHNSON, 1773.

MODERN VOYAGES:

CONTAINING

A VARIETY OF USEFUL AND ENTERTAINING
FACTS, RESPECTING THE EXPEDITIONS
AND THE PRINCIPAL DISCOVERIES OF

CAVENDISH,
DAMPIER,
MONK,
SPILBERGEN,

ANSON,
BYRON,
WALLIS,
CARTERET,

BOUGAINVILLE
DIXON,
PORTLOCK,
PATERSON,
and others.

COMPREHENDING

The most interesting Particulars of Briffon's Narrative of his Shipwreck and Captivity;—the Shipwreck of the Antelope, East India Packet, and a Description of the amiable Inhabitants of the Pelew Islands, never before known to any European;—also the latest authentic Accounts from Botany Bay;—as well as curious Information from several ingenious Writers and Travellers.

FOR THE AMUSEMENT AND INSTRUCTION OF
YOUTH OF BOTH SEXES.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOLUME II.

By the Reverend JOHN ADAMS, A. M.

Orbem terrarum circumdederunt.

Through various climes they trac'd old ocean's bounds
Towards each pole, till check'd by nature's mounds,
Where icy piles in awful forms arise,
And stretch their summits to the dark'ned skies.

L O N D O N :

Printed for G. KEARLEY, at Johnson's Head, in Fleet Street.

MDCXC.

MODERN VOYAGES

CONTAINING

A VARIETY OF USEFUL AND ENTERTAINING
FACTS RESPECTING THE EXPEDITIONS
AND THE PERSONAL TRAVELLERS

BY
J. H. STODOLSKY
AUTHOR OF
"THE HISTORY OF THE
MODERN VOYAGES"

IN THREE VOLUMES

THE FIRST VOLUME CONTAINS THE HISTORY OF THE
EXPEDITIONS OF DISCOVERY IN THE
ARCTIC OCEAN, AND THE
PERSONAL TRAVELLERS WHO
WENT TO THE NORTH POLE
AND THE SOUTH POLE
AND THE PERSONAL TRAVELLERS
WHO WENT TO THE EQUATOR
AND THE PERSONAL TRAVELLERS
WHO WENT TO THE TROPICS

BY J. H. STODOLSKY

VOLUME I



VOLUME II

BY THE REV. J. H. STODOLSKY

OF THE BRITISH MUSEUM

THE SECOND VOLUME CONTAINS THE HISTORY OF THE
EXPEDITIONS OF DISCOVERY IN THE
INDIAN OCEAN, AND THE
PERSONAL TRAVELLERS WHO
WENT TO THE EQUATOR
AND THE PERSONAL TRAVELLERS
WHO WENT TO THE TROPICS

VOLUME III

BY THE REV. J. H. STODOLSKY

C O N T E N T S

O F V O L U M E I I.

CHAP.		PAGE.
LXX.	<i>Of the King of Pelew's Visit—his Reception—and Behaviour</i>	I
LXXI.	<i>Of Captain Wilson's visit to Pelew, and some account of the Natives</i>	II
LXXII.	<i>Of the Battle of Artingall</i>	19
LXXIII.	<i>On the Death and Funeral of Raa Kook's Son</i>	21
LXXIV.	<i>On the Punishment of Cobbing</i>	28
LXXV.	<i>Abba Thulle visits the English, with his Wife and Daughter</i>	29
LXXVI.	<i>On the launching of the Schooner, and Blanchard's Resolution to remain</i>	34
LXXVII.	<i>Captain Wilson sets Sail, and takes with him Lee Boo, the King's second Son,</i>	37
LXXVIII.	<i>Characters of Abba Thulle, and Raa Kook</i>	48
LXXIX.	<i>A general Description of the Pelew Islands—Productions—Inhabi-</i>	
	a 3	tants

CHAP.	PAGE.
<i>tants—Dress—Dispositions— Manners—Religion—Govern- ment, &c.</i>	52
LXXX. <i>Of the Antelope's Passage to Eng- land, with Anecdotes of Prince Lee Boo</i>	69
LXXXI. <i>Lee Boo's Death and Epitaph</i>	83
LXXXII. <i>Hunter's Account of the Kingdom of Pegu</i>	88
LXXXIII. <i>On the Situation and Climate of Pegu</i>	90
LXXXIV. <i>A Description of the Natives</i>	92
LXXXV. <i>On the Disposition, Manners, Re- ligion, and Arts, of the Inhabi- tants of Pegu</i>	90
LXXXVI. <i>Of their Commercial Articles</i>	98
LXXXVII. <i>On the Manners and Customs of the Arabs</i>	101
LXXXVIII. <i>An ingenious French Gentleman's Description of the Manners and Character of the Turks, A. D. 1784</i>	123
LXXXIX. <i>The same Author's Account of the City of Cairo in Egypt, and the ceremony observed on the depar- ture of the Caravan for Mecca</i>	127
2	xc. Captain

CHAP.	PAGE.
XC. Captain Dixon's Account of the Sandwich Islands - -	132
XC. Of Cook's River, and the Inhabi- tants of the adjacent Country	136
XCII. The Subject continued	140
XCIII. Captain Dixon's Description of the Inhabitants of the North West Coast of America, A. D. 1787 - - -	148
XCIV. A short Account of Captain Port- lock's, and Captain Dixon's Voyage to the North West Coast of America, in the King George, and Queen Charlotte, A. D. 1785, 1786, 1787, 1788	158
XCv. Captain Portlock's Remarks	161
XCvi. On the Commercial Advantages which may be derived from that Part of America, visited by Cap- tain Portlock - - -	163
XCvii. Captain Portlock's Description of the Natives of Hinchinbrooke Cove - - -	166
XCviii. Captain Dixon's Account of the Disposal of Furs at China	171
XCix. Mr. De Briffon's Narrative of his	

CHAP.	PAGE.
<i>his Shipwreck and Captivity,</i>	
<i>A. D. 1787</i> - - -	174
<i>c. Dr. Sparman visits our Author</i>	175
<i>ci. The Ship strikes against a Shoal,</i> <i>and is wrecked</i> - - -	177
<i>cii. Mr. Briffon falls into the hands</i> <i>of a Talbe</i> - - -	181
<i>cihi. Of the Manner of Travelling in</i> <i>the Desarts</i> - - -	185
<i>civ. A Change of Mr. Briffon's Re-</i> <i>ligion is attempted</i> - - -	194
<i>cv. Means which occurred to set Mr.</i> <i>Briffon at Liberty</i> - - -	203
<i>cvl. Of Mr. Briffon's Hardship's on</i> <i>his Journey to Morocco</i> - -	208
<i>cvii. Mr. Briffon's Audience with the</i> <i>Emperor of Morocco</i> - - -	210
<i>cviii. Mr. Briffon's Sentiments respect-</i> <i>ing the Emperor of Morocco,</i> <i>and the Conduct of the Consuls</i>	213
<i>cix. On the Ignorance of the Arabs</i>	216
<i>- cx. Entertaining Information respect-</i> <i>ing Barbary, addressed to Dr.</i> <i>Forrestier at Rome, A. D.</i> <i>1785</i> - - - -	217
<i>cxl. A singular Adventure</i> - -	220
<i>cxil. On</i>	

CHAP.	PAGE.
CXII. <i>On the Trade of Barbary</i>	225
CXIII. <i>M. Poiret makes Excursions from La Calle, in quest of Fruits and Plants</i>	231
CXIV. <i>On the Dress of the Bedouin Arabs, and of the Moors,</i>	237
CXV. <i>Of the Politeness and Customs of the Moors</i>	245
CXVI. <i>A brief Detail of Governor Phil- lip's Voyage to Botany Bay, with an Account of the Establishment of the Colonies at Port Jackson, and Norfolk Island</i>	248
CXVII. <i>Of Port Jackson, and the Inha- bitants of the Country</i>	250
CXVIII. <i>Some Account of the Country</i>	254
CXIX. <i>The Natives have some Idea of Sculpture</i>	255
CXX. <i>Of Norfolk Island, with an Ac- count of the Execution of one of the Convicts</i>	256
CXXI. <i>Wheat and Barley are sown; some of their Cattle stray; the Surgeon's Return of the Dead and Sick</i>	258
CXXII. <i>Of the first Act of Depredation made by the Natives</i>	260
CXXIII. <i>Of</i>	

CHAP.	PAGE.
CXXIII. <i>Of the Climate and Soil at Sidney Cove</i>	261
CXXIV. <i>Of the Discoveries of Lieutenant Shortland, who returned from Botany Bay to England, by the way of Batavia</i>	262
CXXV. <i>Lieutenant Watts's Narrative of the Return of the Lady Penrhyn Transport from Port Jackson, by way of Otaheite to Canton</i>	266
CXXVI. <i>Captain Marshall's Account of the Passage of the Scarborough Transport, in Company with the Charlotte, Captain Gilbert, from Port Jackson to Canton, by the way of Tinian</i>	269
CXXVII. <i>Of a particular kind of Shark, met with in Port Jackson, by Lieutenant Watts, and thence Watts's Shark</i>	272
CXXVIII. <i>Of the Dog of New South Wales</i>	273
CXXIX. <i>On the Dress of the Inhabitants of Dieppe in France, and our Author's Passage to Cherbourg, A. D. 1788</i>	275
CXXX. <i>A singular Character</i>	279
CXXXI. <i>Of</i>	

CHAP.	PAGE.
CXXXI. <i>Of the Palace of the Thuilleries, the Bastile, and the French King's Library</i>	284
CXXXII. <i>The History of a Nun</i>	291
CXXXIII. <i>Of Rousseau</i>	295
CXXXIV. <i>Of the grand Religious Ceremo- nial, held in the Church of No- tre Dame at Paris, on the As- sumption of the Virgin Mary</i>	298
CXXXV. <i>Lieutenant Paterfon's Expedition to Caffraria, with an Account of a German who had for seve- ral Years associated with the Hottentot Tribes</i>	304
CXXXVI. <i>Of the Hospitality of the Caffres, with their Manners, Regula- tions, and Customs</i>	311
CXXXVII. <i>Of the Hardships sustained by Mr. Paterfon and his Retinue, with a particular Description of the Camelopardalis</i>	326
CXXXVIII. <i>On the Nests of the Loxia</i>	337
CXXXIX. <i>Mr. Consett's Expedition to Swe- den, Swedish Lapland, and Fin- land</i>	339
CXL. <i>On</i>	

CXL.	On the Present State of the In-	
	quisition in Spain	346
CXLI.	Of the Bigotry of the Spaniards	366
CXLII.	Comparison between the Inhabi-	
	tants of Southern and Northern	
	Climates	371

SELECTIONS

FROM

MODERN VOYAGES.

C H A P. LXX.

OF THE KING OF PELEW'S VISIT—HIS RE-
CEPTION—AND BEHAVIOUR.

IN a short time after this the English were informed that the King was coming; and in less than an hour they saw a great number of canoes turning the point which formed the harbour. But the king stopped as soon as he got within the bay, and directed one squadron of the canoes, which were all armed, to retire to the back of the island; thinking, probably, that so great a number of armed people would create an alarm among the strangers.

He then came forward with the rest in great form, and with much parade, as far as the tide, which was then low, would permit them; and it was signified to Captain Wilson, by the King's brothers, that he should then go and meet him.

Accordingly two of his own people took him on their shoulders, and carried him through the water to the King's canoe, which he was requested to enter; and he and the King, whose name was *Abba Thulle*, embraced one another.

The captain then related the nature of their misfortune to Abba Thulle, by means of the two Malays, and repeated his request to be permitted to build a vessel to carry them home; and the king again gave his permission for them to build it, either where they were, or at the island where he resided; but recommended the latter, adding, that the island on which they had landed was unhealthy, which was the reason it was not inhabited; and that he apprehended they would be ill, when another wind began to blow. The captain informed him, that they had a person with them whose business it was to cure diseases; and that it would be very inconvenient to them if they removed farther from the wreck of their vessel, because they could not then procure from her such things as they might want, without much trouble

ble

ble and loss of time. To these reasons the King assented; and making signs that he wished to land, the captain was carried on shore by his people, and Abba Thulle stepping into the water followed him.

On his landing, he looked about him with a good deal of apparent suspicion, which, however, was soon removed. Raa Kook made up to him, and a sail being spread for him, agreeable to their practice, the chiefs of his company sat also down, forming a square; and his other attendants, to the amount of about three hundred, inclosed them in a circle, squatting down at the same time in such a position as that they could rise in a twinkling. Captain Wilson made him a present of a piece of cloth, and some ribbons, which seemed to please him very much. He was quite naked as well as his brothers, and without any bone on his wrist, or other ornament. He carried a hatchet of iron on his shoulder, which was so adapted to it, that it gave him no inconvenience.

Abba Thulle, the king, was introduced by Captain Wilson to the officers and all his men; and upon being told that Mr. Benger was second in command, he designed him the *Kickaray Ruppak*, supposing Captain Wilson to be the King of some country; but when he was made to under-

stand that he belonged to a mighty sovereign, and that he was only his *Captain*, he readily got hold of the word *Captain*, by which name he constantly saluted him afterwards, and Mr. Benger, *Kickaray Captain*.

The King then enquired for Captain Wilson's badge of supremacy, which put him to a stand. Luckily Mr. Benger slipped his ring into his hand, which being produced, and the manner of wearing it shewn, pleased Abba Thulle not a little, as it carried some affinity to their ornament of the bone.

Raa Kook having, as before mentioned, examined every thing belonging to the English very minutely, took much pains in pointing them out to the King; they went through the tents, in which every thing surpris'd them; nor did the difference between the Chinese and English escape their notice. Raa Kook at the same time gave his brother to understand, that there were many different nations and classes of mankind on the earth; who were frequently at war with one another, as he often was with his neighbouring islanders. Abba Thulle appeared to despise the Chinese exceedingly, because they had no musquets.

But

But nothing seemed to strike Abba Thulle with more astonishment than the fire-arms, with which Raa Kook endeavoured to make him acquainted. He expressed much anxiety to see them used, which Captain Wilson ordered immediately to be done. He desired Mr. Benger to cause the sailors to go through their exercise ranked up on the sea beach, being then low water, while he explained their motions to the King. The men went through various evolutions, with great readiness, marching backwards and forwards, and concluded with three volleys.

The astonishment and surprise of the natives, on hearing the report of the musquets, is not easily conceived; indeed, their hooting and hallooing made a noise little inferior to it. Captain Wilson judged it expedient to be guilty of a little profusion of their powder, on this occasion, in order to impress the minds of the natives with a more enlarged idea of the power of the English; a design which was fully answered by it. But still further to shew them the effects of their fire-arms, Mr. Benger ordered one of the live doves, which they had, to be let loose, at which he fired, and immediately brought it down, with a leg and a wing broken. This surpassed every thing in their estimation;

indeed, they now seemed to have lost themselves in wonder and amazement.

Raa Kook was by this time pretty well acquainted with any articles the English had about them, which he took great pains in pointing out to the King his brother ; those that seemed principally to draw their notice, were, a grinding-stone, which they turned round with great satisfaction, observing the effect it had upon pieces of iron ; they also examined the tents, and a few culinary articles the English had. But the dogs were the greatest fund of entertainment to them, with whose barking they were so much delighted, that they kept a continual uproar with them, and it was found necessary to confine them. The King examined the English as to their provisions, and got a piece of ham and a live goose.

Abba Thalle was vastly pleased with what he had seen, and proposed going away. This was notified to his attendants by a loud shriek from one of his officers, which gave not a little alarm to the English. It was instantaneously obeyed. They all rushed to their canoes with great alacrity, and the King with the greater part of the natives took leave of them.

Raa Kook remained with the English all night, as did the King's son, and a few of their attendants.

dants. Captain Wilson ordered two tents to be pitched, one for the principal people, and the other for the commonalty. He continued himself with Raa Kook and his party after the guard was set for some hours. The natives in the distant tent, anxious to pay all attention to their visitors, prepared to sing a song in their way.

Their method of tuning their voices for this purpose, was attended with sounds so very dissonant and harsh, that the English thought they were beginning their war-hoop, or giving a signal to the King and those with him to attack them. Impressed with this idea, every man seized his musquet and ran to the tent where Captain Wilson was, supposing him to be in the most imminent danger. There they were undeceived, and attended to the song, which was conducted in the following manner. A chief gave out the line, which a company next him took up and completed the verse. The last line they repeated, and it was taken up by the next party, who also sung a verse. They continued their song some time, and made signs for our people to repay them in kind, which was done by a lad named Cobble-dick, to their great satisfaction. The manner of this lad's singing was afterwards mentioned to the King, who, upon hearing him, was so much

pleased, that he never met with him afterwards, without desiring him to sing.

We come now to mention a circumstance, which presents these natives of Pelew in a light that could not have been preconceived; a circumstance which discovers such nice feelings, as on the one hand displays human nature in a very pleasing attire, in this her native dress; while on the other it may put to the blush enlightened nations and individuals. The English had no other means for again revisiting their native homes, but by constructing a small schooner; and, for this purpose, had only a few instruments saved from the wreck. These they carefully concealed from the natives, who had shewn a particular attachment to iron and instruments made of that metal. Accidentally a chief had observed where they were, and requested a cutlass from Captain Wilson. The captain was loth to part with it, but fearing worse consequences in case he refused, thought it best to give it. As they went out of the tent Raa Kook observed it with great displeasure, took it from him, and returned it to Captain Wilson.

In a few hours the *Malay* coming ashore, told the captain he had given great offence by offering a cutlass to an inferior officer, and neglecting the
King

King and his brothers. In order to make up matters, Captain Wilson thought it best to present each of the king's brothers with some cloth and and ribbons, which were very coolly received—they seemed to be unhappy. In the afternoon the king came round from the back part of the island, where he had spent the night, and Captain Wilson went out in the jolly-boat, with Tom Rose, to meet him. Now Abba Thulle, who had been so happy and pleased the day before, appeared with a gloomy reserve, and the poor Englishmen trembled in anticipating the dreadful effects of his displeasure which they thought he was meditating. But the real cause of the uneasiness which evidently depressed them all, was nothing more than a struggle in their own breasts, how they should ask a favour from strangers almost wholly in their own power, without having the appearance of a command.

A neighbouring nation had injured them, and as they meant to attack them in battle in a few days, they very justly foresaw the advantages which would arise from the presence of a few of the English sailors with fire-arms. At length, with much evident confusion, Abba Thulle hinted it to Captain Wilson, who immediately assured him, he might at any time command his

A 5

men,

men, who were entirely at his service. No sooner was this answer notified by the interpreter, than every countenance brightened up, and cordiality and happiness were restored. The King immediately dubbed the Captain a brother Rupak, intreated him to send some of his people to the part of the island where he lived, to carry him whatever provisions they needed, and concluded with assuring him, that his people were entirely at his service, to assist in constructing their vessel, or any thing else in their power.

He immediately retired to the opposite side of the island, promising to return next morning for the men. Nor was the happy settlement of this affair less agreeable to the English than the natives. The fear of having incurred the displeasure of those, whose favour was so necessary, had distressed them not a little, and they accordingly were every one more zealous than his neighbour to be chosen for this service.

CHAP. LXXI.

OF CAPTAIN WILSON'S VISIT TO PELEW, AND
SOME ACCOUNT OF THE NATIVES.

ON the thirty-first of August, Captain Wilson paid a visit to Pelew. Mr. Devis, Mr. Sharp, and Harry Wilson, accompanied the Captain on this visit. The English went in their jolly-boat, attended by Raa Kook and other natives in a canoe.

About one o'clock they reached Pelew, fired six musquets, and fixed their colours in the ground, at the end of the causeway where they landed. Raa Kook conducted them to a house where they waited the arrival of Abba Thulle. Meantime the natives thronged into the house to have a peep at the English, bringing along with them various refreshments and sweet-meats. In a little it was notified that the King was at hand, when, notwithstanding the multitude then present, the greatest silence prevailed. On his arrival, Captain Wilson embraced him as at first meeting, and presented him with a few trinkets, which were very agreeably received.

Abba Thulle now proposed to conduct them to the town, which is about a quarter of a mile from the landing place, where they were. The English, in order to assume some little formality, carried their colours before them. They passed through a wood, and then came to a fine pavement or causeway. There are large broad stones laid in the middle for the ease of walking, and lesser ones on the sides. This led them to the town, where they were conducted to a large square pavement, surrounded by houses. In the centre stood a larger house than the rest, which was allotted to the English for their accommodation. In it there were a number of women, of a superior-rank, being wives to the Rupacks or principal officers of state, who received them very politely and presented them with cocoa-nuts and sweet drink, of which all partook.

In a little the King, after a suitable apology to Captain Wilson, retired to bathe, and a message was sent from the Queen, expressing a wish to be favoured with the company of the English at her house. Thither they all repaired, and were seated in a little square before the house. It appeared that this lady was the principal wife of Abba Thul'e, (for he had others,) great attention being paid to her by all. The King resided almost

most constantly at her house. She appeared at the window, and by means of Raa Kook, examined into the various peculiarities in the appearance of the English which struck her. She sent them a broiled pigeon, which is the greatest rarity the island produces, and is held in the highest estimation. It is unlawful for any but Rupacks and their wives to taste them.

After satisfying her curiosity, they were conducted by the General to his house, where they met with a very different reception, and had an opportunity of observing the benevolent heart of this worthy man in domestic life. In his house they were treated with the greatest kindness, and with the most expressive tokens of real welcome; but what particularly warmed their hearts on this occasion was the endearing behaviour of Raa Kook to his wife and children. These last he fondled on his knees, and encouraged with all the genuine marks of parental affection. The night was now pretty far advanced, when they retired to their house, where their friend the General spared no pains to render their accommodation comfortable. He procured plenty of mats for them to sleep on, kindled fires to defend them from the mosquitos and damps, and ordered some of his own men to sleep at the other end to protect

test them from any of the natives, who might be led to disturb them from motives of curiosity. Next morning they were attended as usual by Raa Kook, and, after walking about for some time, were ordered to attend the King to breakfast in the Queen's house, where they had been the day before.

They were received with a peculiar etiquette, which was never afterwards practised. The house was all in one apartment; at the one end of which hung a screen of mats, which when drawn up discovered the King and Queen seated. They breakfasted on yams and fish very agreeably. After breakfast Mr. Sharp, the surgeon, accompanied by Mr. Devis, set out to visit a child of Arra Kook's, which was sick. His house was about three miles distant. This gave them an opportunity of examining the country, which they had not before done. This visit was very acceptable, and the Rupack thought he could not sufficiently repay them. Mr. Sharp examined the child's body, which was almost covered with ulcers, but could not prescribe any thing, having no medicines. He approved of the mode of cure they had adopted, which was chiefly fomentation. Arra Kook then laded several servants with provisions, &c. in baskets, to be sent to the boats,
and

and assured them, when they left the island, they should have his whole rookery of pigeons. This, by the way, was the greatest compliment he could offer them, in his estimation, and sufficiently shews the uncommon gratitude with which his bosom was warmed.—Indeed, the readers will on many occasions have anticipated the remark, that the finer feelings and virtues which adorn humanity, shone in these natives in no common degree. They returned to Captain Wilson at Pelew the same evening.

The request which had been repeatedly mentioned by Abba Thulle, was now formally made to Captain Wilson, by desire of a council of Rupacks, *viz.* that he would allow them ten men to accompany them to a second engagement at Artingall; which was most readily complied with. Captain Wilson mentioned, at same time, that it would be obliging were the men detained as short time as possible, not to hinder the progress of their schooner. To this Abba Thulle most engagingly replied, “That it was not his wish to detain them longer than was absolutely necessary, but after doing him so much service, he behoved to keep them a day or two to rejoice with him.” The council had met in the forenoon on this business. Every Rupack or chief was seated on a stone, that
for

for the King being higher than the rest, and disputed from side to side as it happened, without any regular order of speakers. It appeared that every thing was decided by a majority, so that their government bears no small affinity to our own.

The remainder of the time the English spent at Pelew, was very agreeably employed. One day, when in company with a great number of the natives, Mr. Devis, who was an excellent draughtsman, took out his pencil, and was busily employed in taking the likeness of a woman who drew his attention. The lady observing him, and ignorant of his intention, retired in great confusion. A chief beside him, noticing the drawing, was greatly pleased and shewed it to the King, who immediately ordered two women to come forward and stand in a proper position for Mr. Devis to take their likenesses. Mr. Devis soon finished his sketches and presented them to the King who was highly entertained, and calling the women shewed them their portraits, with which they were much pleased. Abba Thulle desired Mr. Devis to give him his pencil and paper, on which he scratched a few figures, very rudely, but sufficiently to shew his conception of what had been done. So that while he thus displayed

played his own inferiority to the artist, he at the same time gave evident proofs of the sense he had of it, and his wishes to possess these qualifications which so pleased him.

Captain Wilson and his companions were carried to see their method of building canoes, by which means they saw some canoes which were just returned from a skirmish, in which they had proved victorious. They had captured a canoe, which was considered as great a trophy as a first rate man of war would be in Britain. On this occasion the English had an opportunity of observing their method of celebrating such exploits, or keeping a day of festivity. There was a great feast prepared for the warriors, previous to which they danced in the following manner: they ornamented themselves with plantain leaves, nicely paired into stripes, like our ribbons, which, being of a yellowish colour, had a good effect on their dark skins; then forming themselves into circles, one within another, an elderly person began a song, or long sentence (for they were not certain which), and on his coming to the end of it, all the dancers joined in concert, dancing along at the same time; then a new sentence was pronounced and danced to, which continued till every one had sung, and his verse had been danced to.

Their

Their manner of dancing is not so much capering and leaping, or other feats of agility, as a certain method of reclining their bodies, and yet preserving their balance. During the dance sweet drink was handed about, and when it was finished an elegant supper was brought in.

Mr. Sharp carried Captain Wilson one afternoon to see his favourite Arra Kook, who received them with great joy, and entertained them very kindly. They went through many plantations on their way, and were much surprised to find the country so highly cultivated. They observed a tree, named by the natives *Ri'a'mall*, which the English supposed to be a species of the bread-fruit. After enjoying plentifully this good man's bounty, they returned to Pelew, highly delighted with their agreeable excursion. In the course of any observations they had opportunity of making, they found the employment of the men generally to be making darts, hewing trees, &c. while the women looked after the yams, wrought the mats and baskets, nursed their children, and dressed the victuals.

On Thursday the fourth of September they left Pelew, loaded with presents, and amidst the loud acclamations of a vast number of the natives. They arrived safe at the cove about nine in the evening

evening and found all their companions well, and proceeding in their work with the utmost alacrity. The Captain immediately informed them of the request the natives had made for ten men, and every one was anxious to be of the party. At length they were determined upon, and ordered to be in readiness on a call.

CHAP. LXXII.

OF THE BATTLE OF ARTINGALL.

AS the King had some days before sent information to Artingall of his proposed attack, and at the same time terms of peace, he now ordered a canoe with four men in it to proceed to the island, and enquire whether they were to submit or to fight.

The messengers soon returned, informing that they refused the terms offered them. Immediately *Abba Thulle* ordered the conch to be sounded, and waved his chinam stick in the air, the signal for forming the line of battle.

Meantime the enemy collected their canoes, but kept close by the shore, shewing an evident disinclination to come to battle.

Abba

Abba Thulle had dressed himself in the scarlet coat which Captain Wilson had given him, and kept one of the Englishmen in his canoe. The other nine were dispersed through the fleet in nine different canoes, armed with musquets, cutlasses, bayonets and pistols.

Finding the enemy would not advance, and their present situation being very unfavourable for the attack, the King ordered a party of canoes to go round a neck of high land, and lie there concealed. He then ordered the remainder to exchange a few darts in their present position, and retreat with apparent precipitancy; by these means he expected to draw the enemy from their shores, and the concealed squadron could then get betwixt them and the land, and thus hem them in on all hands.

He dispatched his orders with great readiness, by means of some very swift sailing canoes, which cut the water with astonishing velocity. His scheme took place as he wished. The enemy rushed out to pursue the apparent fugitives, and the canoes coming round the high land, surrounded them on all sides. Those who fled now turned about, and, by means of the few fire arms, threw the enemy into terror and confusion. The noise of the musquets, their friends dropping they knew
not

not how, and the triumphant halloo which the natives of Pelew set up, totally discomfited them. They retreated with precipitation, rushed through the canoes that were betwixt them and the land, as there were but few of them, and by that means all escaped but six canoes, and nine natives who were captured. The victory was, however, considered as very complete. It is very seldom that any canoes are taken, and two or three prisoners are generally the greatest number. The dead bodies are carefully carried off the field of battle, lest they should fall into the hands of the conquerors to expose them.

CHAP. LXXIII.

ON THE DEATH AND FUNERAL OF RAA KOOK'S SON.

A LITTLE before this engagement Mr. Sharp was requested by Raa Kook to go along with him to Pelew, to inspect his son's foot, which was very dangerously hurt by a spear, which having sunk deep into the foot was broke off in attempting to pull it out; and the barb of the spear having got in among the small bones, they could not
extract

extract it. Meantime, his foot swelled amazingly, to the great distress of the young man. One of the natives, reputed among them as a man of skill, began to cut away the flesh. But, after mangling his foot in a terrible manner, he was obliged to desist, as the effusion of blood became so great that he could not continue the operation. They, therefore, had recourse to their fomentation, of which Mr. Sharp much approved, and desired it to be continued till he saw him, which he could not propose at that time, three of the ablest men being sick.

Mr. Sharp's account of his excursion to see him, some time after, is as follows :

Immediately on his landing he went directly to his father's house, who met him with visible distress in his countenance.

Mr. Sharp acquainted him, that he was come to see his son, and had brought such instruments with him as would enable him, he hoped, to administer relief. He smiled approbation, and conducted him to his house, where Abba Thulle and several of the principal people were assembled. After paying his respects to them, Mr. Sharp was informed, that during Raa Kook's stay at Oroolong, the swelling had subsided by means of the fomentation, and they had forced the spear through
his

his foot, as the only method of extracting it. At this time the whole army was setting out on the grand expedition, which the young man hearing, could not bear the thoughts of being absent from. He therefore insisted upon being carried to his canoe, where, though he could not stand on his feet to fight, he could raise himself so much up as to throw a spear. He, therefore, went along, and very early in the engagement fell a sacrifice to his magnanimity; a spear entering through his throat, occasioned his immediate death. It is impossible to pass over in silence the unhappy fate of this gallant youth. A spirit more truly heroic, history has not left on record; nor need we hesitate to say, that there was more real valour displayed in this action, which accident only has brought on record, than in many feats which have attracted the admiration of many generations.

This also gives us an opportunity of mentioning their mode of burial, to which Mr. Sharp was witness on this occasion. Raa Kook desired Mr. Sharp and the boatswain to accompany him to the water side, where two canoes were waiting, into which they went, accompanied by about twenty Rupacks, whom they had not formerly seen, as they belonged to another island, though
friendly

friendly to Abba Thulle. Mr. Sharp knew not whither they were going, but suffered himself to be conducted by his friend. They landed upon an island about four miles distant from Pelew. They went a little way up into the island, to a small uninhabited village, where there were four or five houses, surrounded by a neat pavement.

After resting about an hour here, they set forward to a town about half a mile distant, where a great many people of both sexes were assembled, and an entertainment prepared. Immediately after this, the women retired; and, in a little, their attention was drawn to the sound of distress and weeping at a little distance; the voices appeared to be principally those of women. Raa Kook immediately led Mr. Sharp from the company to the place whence the noise proceeded. They found a great multitude of women attending a dead corpse, which was neatly wrapped in a mat, and supported by four men. They kept up a constant lamentation, and were just about to lay it down, when the strangers joined them. The body was immediately deposited in the grave without any ceremony, while the men who had born it on their shoulders proceeded to cover it quickly with the dust. The women then kneeled down, and their cries increased so much, that they

they appeared as if they were anxious to tear up the very body again which had been just buried.

A heavy shower of rain obliged Mr. Sharp to leave this interesting scene to seek shelter, but he never could learn the cause of Raa Kook's behaviour on this occasion; as, notwithstanding the uncommon regard he had for his late son, whose body they were convinced it was, he preserved the most profound silence on the subject; nor did he appear particularly interested. The most probable conjecture they could form was, that he considered it to be below that dignity of mind, which he, on all occasions, wished to support, to appear concerned on an occasion which generally produces those feelings that betray what they consider as human weakness.

The night proved very stormy, so they could not return to Pelew, but spent the evening with Raa Kook. In the morning Raa Kook carried Mr. Sharp and the boatswain to a little hut contiguous to the place where his son had been buried. Here they found only an old woman, to whom the General spoke for some time. She then went out, but returned in a little, bringing with her two old cocoa-nuts, some red ochre, and a bundle of bettle-nut with the leaves. He took the cocoa-nuts and crossed them with the

ochre, placing them one on each side by him; after which he repeated something to himself, which they supposed to be a prayer. He then crossed the beetle-nut in the same manner, and sat musing over it a little, when he gave them to the woman, who carried them out, as Mr. Sharp supposed, to the grave; he wished to follow her, but as Raa Kook appeared under great agitation and not inclined to rise, he did not leave him, nor enquire farther.

Mr. Sharp entertained his friends with the inspection of his watch and surgical instruments, with which they were greatly pleased, as well as with the description he gave them of the mode of amputation, &c.

Their countrymen they had left at Pelew were in great distress about their absence. They had been witnesses to the funeral of another young man who had been slain in the same battle. As they were accidentally straggling through the fields, about two miles from Pelew, they observed a great number of the natives going towards a village, with Abba Thulle at their head. They came to a large pavement, where the King was seated, and a great crowd surrounded him. Those who bare the corpse, moved slowly on before the
King,

King, who addressed them in a speech, probably recapitulating the qualifications of the deceased.

This eulogium he delivered with great solemnity; and the respectful silence of all around him added a degree of affecting grandeur to the scene. The body was then carried to the grave, attended by women only, and thither Mr. Matthias Wilson followed. He observed an aged woman getting out of the new made grave, whom he supposed to be the mother or some near relation of the deceased, who had been examining if every thing was properly prepared to her mind.

The last offices they always commit to the women, as the men who are nearly interested, or relations, might be led to discover some exterior marks of grief, which they consider as derogatory to the dignity of manhood. Immediately on the body being laid in the grave, the women set up loud lamentations, as in the case of Raa Kook's son, and Mr. Wilson left them.

Their graves are made in the same manner as in this country. Some have a flat stone laid horizontally on the grave, to prevent any person from trampling upon it. They have also particular spots of ground set apart for the purpose of burying their dead.

C H A P. LXXIV.

ON THE PUNISHMENT OF COBBING.

AMONG the first employments, after Captain Wilson's return to his men, was *discipline*. During his absence, the cook had misbehaved exceedingly, appropriating a great part of the small portion of meat they were allowed, to himself and his assistant.

As it was necessary, in their present situation, that the strictest discipline should be exercised, Captain Wilson, by a court martial, ordered him a *cobbing*.

The native tenderness of Raa Kook's disposition appeared eminently on this occasion. When he saw the man stripped to the waist, and his hands tied against a tree to keep him extended, he entreated Captain Wilson to let him off.

The punishment of cobbing is inflicted by a thin flat piece of wood like a battledore ; which Raa no sooner saw exercised, and the man bearing it patiently, than he was reconciled, standing by and encouraging him all the time.

A Chinese

A Chinese was also punished in the same manner, for wounding one of his countrymen with a stone. But he roared and bellowed so lustily, that Raa Kook was greatly entertained with his cowardice.

CHAP. LXXV.

ABBA THULLE VISITS THE ENGLISH WITH HIS
WIFE AND DAUGHTER. -

ABBA THULLE arrived about ten o'clock on the seventeenth, with the agreeable news, that the chief minister of Artingall had been at Pelew with offers of peace, which had been concluded upon, to the great joy of Raa Kook and the other natives. Abba Thulle brought his youngest daughter with him, named *Erre Bess*, of whom he appeared to be exceedingly fond. He conducted her through all the cove, and explained the use of every thing with much attention. Besides her he also brought with him on this visit *Ludee*, one of his wives; a very beautiful woman, young, and greatly superior to any they had hitherto seen. Her genteel deportment and graceful step drew

the attention of every beholder. She had with her eight or ten females, who were all escorted by Raa Kook, and shewn the forge, vessel, guns, tents, and other curiosities, with which they were greatly surprized. The King had also brought some of his artificers with him, or *Tacklebys*, as he called them, to observe the progress of the vessel, &c. He seemed peculiarly anxious that they should pay attention to the schooner, which all ranks agreed in considering as the *ne plus ultra* of human workmanship.

After their curiosity had been fully satisfied, the Captain prepared an entertainment for them in the tent, consisting principally of fish, and boiled rice, sweetened with molasses, of which they appeared very fond.

A good deal of conversation took place on this visit, between the King and Captain Wilson, on various subjects. Abba Thulle acknowledged that the English musquets had now procured him peace with almost all his neighbours; he at the same time requested, that the Captain would leave ten musquets with him when he left the island. This Captain Wilson told him would not be in his power, as Britain was at present engaged in war with several different nations, with whose vessels they might fall in on their return homeward,

ward, and so require defensive weapons; but he promised him five, which greatly pleased him.

Abba Thulle then enquired what quantity of powder they had, but observing that Captain Wilson was not disposed to answer him readily, he very politely changed the subject.

The Captain then desired he would assure his neighbouring islanders, that the English, deeply sensible of the kind usage they had received from the inhabitants of Pelew, were determined to return very soon, in a much larger ship, and with a greater number of men, and fully avenge any insult that might be offered to the Pelewites, either by the people of Artingall, or any other island.

Agreeable to a former promise of Captain Wilson's, Abba Thulle then informed him he had come at this time to get the guns from the wreck, which should either be placed at Oroolong or Pelew, as the English pleased. Captain Wilson, having previously consulted his officers, desired him to take them all to Pelew, except one, which they might perhaps need in the schooner. Accordingly next day, the King ordered some of his people to go to the wreck in order to remove them. Having no tackle, they found it a very difficult jobb, and were forced to send for ten of our
 B 4 people

people to assist them. The Englishmen speedily lodged them in the canoes to the surprise of the natives, who could not conceive it possible to handle these heavy pieces with such apparent ease.

The King lodged at the back of the island, carrying with him all his attendants, that the English might be as little interrupted by them as possible. He had not been long there when he sent for Captain Wilson, to give him ten large fish, part of a quantity his people had taken. Of these he would only receive four, which would fully supper all his people, and such is the nature of the climate there, that no fish will keep fresh above five or six hours. The King then ordered the remaining six to be dressed for keeping, and sent to the cove in the morning. Their method of cleaning and dressing them is as follows: The fish is first well cleaned, washed, and all the scales taken off; then two sticks are placed lengthways of the fish, in order to keep it straight, in the same manner as sticks are placed across salmon in this country when kippering. It is then bound round with broad plantain leaves, and smoked over a slow fire. In this state it will be eatable for at least two-days, though not very pleasant.

In

In the morning, the ears of the English were saluted with the noise of singing in the woods, which proved to be Raa Kook and his attendants coming across the country, with the six dried fish, which were very acceptable. This morning the King went to the wreck, and returned to the cove, and breakfasted on tea with Captain Wilson, three Artingall people being also of the party. After breakfast, the strangers were led through the works, and their surprise was nothing inferior to any that had yet been expressed. The guns particularly interested them, as the means by which so many of their countrymen died, in a manner then incomprehensible. In a few days they had a farther opportunity of seeing the effects of the musquets, by Mr. Benger's killing some pigeons while on wing ; they run to the carcases, and examined them very attentively, and, upon noticing the wounds, observed, it was with such holes as these their countrymen died. On this occasion the Pelewites seemed to exult a little over their neighbours, on the ignorance which they shewed of the use of fire-arms. The people of Artingall, however, retained no animosity on this account, but seemed quite happy and at ease.

CHAP. LXXVI.

ON THE LAUNCHING OF THE SCHOONER, AND
BLANCHARD'S RESOLUTION TO REMAIN.

THE vessel advancing apace, a consultation was held, to fix on the safest method of launching her, which was agreed to be lay-ways. They had neither pitch nor rosin to pay her with. This want, necessity, the mother of invention, taught them to supply by burning coral stone into lime; then sifting it thoroughly, they mixed it up with grease, and found it an excellent succedaneum.

The captain being told that Blanchard was coming to offer himself to the Pelew King, determined to make a merit of necessity, and therefore signified to Abba Thulle, that as a return for the hospitality with which the English had been treated, they would leave one of their comrades with him as a perpetual residenter, who was qualified to manage the great guns and other things beyond their comprehension. The idea was by no means thrown away; the King was gratified beyond measure.

The

This night Blanchard spent with the King, and was well entertained. He promised to make him a Rupack; to give him a house and plantations, and to allow him two wives. All the crew regretted much to part with Blanchard. His agreeable behaviour made him regretted by all his companions, who lost no opportunity to speak in his behalf to the natives. This resolution of his, however, was inexplicable; as it is difficult to conjecture what motives could urge him to forsake that class of mankind, among whom he had hitherto lived, and be separated from them, perhaps, for ever. As Abba Thulle, Raa Kook, and the natives in general, considered his remaining among them as a very great compliment, they were resolved to make him happy; and there is great probability, he now lives among them in a situation not only comfortable but respectable.

We come now to contemplate a scene peculiarly interesting. Next morning the English proceeded, before day-break, to make ready for the launch; it need scarcely be mentioned, that uncommon pains were taken to put every thing in the most favourable train for getting her afloat. About seven the King and attendants were desired to be present, and in a little time the

vessel was agreeably launched, to the general joy of every spectator. Never was there a more affectingly happy scene.—Every eye seemed to sparkle with a lustre borrowed for the occasion.—Every countenance looked animating joy and heart-felt satisfaction; but few among them could utter their feelings: looks of congratulation circulated around, while every one shook his neighbour's hand with warmest fervor. Home, wives, parents, children, friends—all—all—seemed as within grasp.—But description is unequal to this task. Let not, however, the behaviour of their Pelew friends be forgotten. In their joy, which was also unbounded, real philanthropy was to be seen.—They saw, by this occurrence, those friends whom they valued about to leave them; those friends by whom they had been so much benefited, and from whom they had learned so much.—But they saw them happy.—They knew their whole comfort depended upon the success of this event, and therefore their benevolent hearts participated in the general joy.

After a very happy breakfast indeed, they proceeded to carry every thing aboard, with all possible expedition, and in the afternoon, the flood tide coming in, the ship was hauled into the basin, a deep place of four or five fathom water; and,

and, in the course of the day, they got on board all the provisions, stores, &c. such only excepted as were to be given in presents to the King; and in the morning took on board their anchors, cables, and other necessaries, making bitts, and fitting a rail across the stern of the vessel.

C H A P. LXXVII.

CAPTAIN WILSON SETS SAIL, AND TAKES WITH HIM LEE BOO, THE KING'S SECOND SON.

THE weather and wind appearing favourable, the Captain informed Abba Thulle, that they purposed sailing the next day. This very much distressed him; for he had sent word to the neighbouring Rupacks, that the day following that now mentioned by the captain, was the day the English meant to sail. In consequence of which they were to come to Oroolong the next night, to furnish them with provisions, and bid them farewell. This information determined the captain still more to set sail in the forenoon, as the number of canoes to be expected, would greatly incommode them. He therefore

therefore apologized in the best manner he could to the King, who appeared greatly disappointed. He then begged that the captain and officers would dine with him and his brothers on shore. With this they cheerfully complied, and after dinner Arra Kooker so pathetically begged for the favourite dog, of which he had become excessively fond, that they could not resist his solicitations, though it would prove a particular regret among the sailors. But the General's intention was far otherwise employed. He was already building a ship in imagination; and, to realize his design, wished them to leave their launching ways, saying he would go to work on the same place.

The King had laughed at the insignificance of Arra Kooker's request of the dog; but the subject of ship-building caught his most serious attention. It was of national importance, and of course demanded the patronage of a good prince.

In the midst of their discourse a battle on board the ship between two sailors, called for the presence of the captain. The damage proved no greater than a bloody nose, which being settled, Mr. Wilson again returned. When the circumstance was explained to the King, he observed that there were, no doubt, bad men in all countries.

Permission

Permission was asked, and obtained, to hoist an English pendant on a tree near the cove, with an inscription as follows, on copper, to be placed on another tree adjacent :

THE HONOURABLE
ENGLISH EAST INDIA COMPANY'S SHIP
THE ANTELOPE,
HENRY WILSON, COMMANDER,
WAS LOST UPON THE REEF NORTH OF THIS ISLAND,
IN THE NIGHT
BETWEEN THE 9TH AND 10TH OF AUGUST;
WHO HERE BUILT A VESSEL,
AND SAILED FROM HENCE
THE 12TH OF NOVEMBER, 1783.

Captain Wilson explained the purport of this inscription to Abba Thulle, who was greatly pleased with it; and, having explained it to his people, he assured the English that it should carefully stand there in remembrance of their visitors.

The conversation this day was principally confined to the approaching separation. "When you are gone," said the King, "I much dread that the Artingalls will redouble their attempts against me: and, deprived of your aid, I shall probably feel the effects of that animosity they have always had towards my people, and having no more the
English

English to support me, I shall not be match for them, unless you leave the few musquets you promised me.

The captain was quite satisfied to comply with the request immediately ; but most of the officers, who still had apprehensions, were unwilling to give up the arms till the last moment. That unlucky suspicion, which had so ungenerously taken possession of them, had been so rivetted in their minds, that it was not easily dislodged. It is necessary, however, not to condemn our countrymen too hastily. They had been accustomed to see roguery so generally, and so scientifically practised, that distrust and suspicion are naturally instilled among the first principles of education ; and it was not easy for them to conceive, that the same species should be so very different even at opposite quarters of the globe ; but here they saw the open undisguised actions of nature, knowing no deceit, and dreading none.

Abba Thulle was too quick-sighted not to observe their distrust ; and it is not easy to express the agitation which laboured in his breast, on finding that doubts were harboured of his sincerity. " Why," said he, " should you distrust me ? I never refused you my confidence. If my intentions had been hostile, you would have known it long

long ago, being entirely in my power. But, on the contrary, you have had my utmost assistance; and yet at the very last you suspect me of bad designs!"

The earnestness of his manner spoke his feelings more than his words; nor need it be doubted, that a little recollection brought the blush into the countenances of those whom he addressed. The man who had uniformly behaved with such disinterested, unsuspecting benevolence—the man who freely committed his own son to their care, to be doubted within a few hours of their parting, was a stab, which the sensibility of Abba Thulle could not support. The severity and truth of his reproach, and the noble dignity with which he supported himself, brought the daring thought of butchering him and his brothers to view, and gave a most captivating picture of the mild, yet forcible triumph of virtue. They found themselves guilty, and saw evidently that virtue will flourish in whatever soil she is implanted. Without further hesitation, they sent on board for all the arms that could be spared; and on the boat's return presented him with five musquets, five cutlasses, more than half a barrel of gunpowder, and flint, and ball in proportion. Once more harmony was restored, and the generous Abba Thulle

Thulle forgot, or seemed to forget, their suspicions.

The King's second son, Lee Boo, arrived in the evening from Pelew, under the care of his elder brother. Abba Thulle presented him to the captain, and then to the officers. He advanced in so easy and polite a manner, having much good humour and forcible expression in his aspect, that every one was prepossessed in his favour. As it was now growing dark, the officers went on board, leaving the captain behind, at the King's request. Next day Mr. Wilson informed them, that neither he, the King, nor the Rupacks, enjoyed much rest; the affectionate father employing the moments in giving advice to his son, and in recommending him to the care of the captain; not, however, from the smallest fear that he would be ill-treated: "I would wish you," said he, "to shew my son every thing that is useful, and make him an Englishman. The fine things he will see may probably induce him to slip away from you, in search of less confined gratification; but I beg that you will contrive to calm and subdue the rashness and impetuosity of his youth. I well know, from the different countries he must pass through, that he will be liable to dangers, and even to diseases that we never heard of, which may
kill

kill him; but I also know that death is the common lot; and whether he dies with you, or at Pelew, is of no moment. I know you are a man of humanity; and am, therefore, confident, that if my son be sick, you will look on him with kindness. But should that happen, which your utmost care cannot prevent, let it not deter you or your brother, or any of your countrymen, from returning; for I shall rejoice at the sight."

The captain assured the King that he might rest satisfied of the care and affection with which his son would be treated.—Before Mr. Wilson came on board, he admonished Blanchard (the man who had resolved to renounce his country) as to his conduct among the natives. He desired him to be watchful of the arms and ammunition that would be left behind, that they might defend themselves from their enemies. He begged him not to go naked, like the natives, as it might lessen his importance with them as an Englishman, and countenance an evident indecency; and that he might have no excuse from the want of cloaths, all that could be spared was left him; in order, that if he accepted the King's offer of wives, he might be enabled to dress them somewhat after his own custom. The captain did not forget to enforce on him the absolute necessity of continuing his

his religious duties, and to be particular in keeping Sunday on Sabbath. After this he was requested to ask any favour that might tend to his future comfort; on which he begged to have one of the ship's compasses, and the masts, sails, and oars belonging to the pinnace, which also was intended to be left behind.

Wednesday morning early, an English jack was hoisted at the mast-head of the Oroolong, and a swivel fired as a signal for sailing; which being explained to the King, he ordered all the provisions on board, which he had brought for our voyage. A great number of canoes surrounded the vessel, loaded with presents, so that it was with difficulty they could avoid being overstocked. When just ready for sea, a boat was sent on shore for the captain, who then took Blanchard and the men of the boat into a temporary hut that had been erected; and making them kneel, offered up thanksgivings to that Power who had supported their fainting spirits through so many hazards and toils, and had at last opened to them the door of deliverance. He repeated his advice to Blanchard, earnestly begging him not to forget his religion.

When Lee Boo came to the watering-place, there were sent with him three or four dozen of a
very

very fine fruit, similar to the English apple. It is of a fine crimson colour, and oblong shape. This is a very rare fruit at Pelew, though there are plenty of them in the different South Sea Islands. One of them was given to every officer, and the remainder kept for Lee Boo.

About eight o'clock the captain went on board, attended by Abba Thulle, Lee Boo, the Rupacks, and Blanchard. It being doubtful, as the vessel was heavily laden with provision, whether she would be able to get over the reef, it was resolved to land the two six-pounders and leave the jolly-boat behind, as they had nothing wherewith to repair her, and she was almost worn out. In her room Abba Thulle was at great pains to procure them a proper canoe.

Captain Wilson had recommended Mr. Sharp, the surgeon, to Lee Boo, as his *Sucalic* or friend, and the young man stuck by him with the greatest attention, attending him to whatever part of the vessel he moved, as his Mentor on all occasions. Blanchard now got into his pinnace, in order to take the vessel in tow, and parted from his old ship-mates with as much composure, as if they were to meet again after a short absence. He shook hands with them with the same indifference as if they were to sail down the Thames

on

on a coasting voyage—a striking contrast to what followed !

The vessel now proceeded towards the reef, deeply laden with Abba Thulle's bounty to a degree of superfluity, and surrounded by great numbers of the natives in their canoes, who had every man brought his present, for their good friends the *Englees*—What a luxurious sight to a feeling heart !—There was no room for them, yet every one exclaimed, *only this from me, only this from me* ; and, if refused, they repeated their requests with supplicating countenances and tears in their eyes. Indeed their generosity and affection were so urgent, that a few trifles from the nearest of them were accepted ; while the others, unable to bear the seeming neglect, paddled a-head, and put their little presents in the pinnace.

Several canoes went before the vessel to point out the safest track ; and others were waiting at the reef, to shew them the deepest water : from all these precautions, which were directed by the King, the reef was fortunately cleared without any accident.

The King now came along-side, and gave Lee Boo his blessing, which the youth received with great respect and tenderness. He next embraced the Captain, in much apparent distress, and then
cordially

cordially shook hands with all the officers, crying—"You are happy because you are going home, and I am happy because you are so; but still very unhappy at your going away." Once more renewing his assurances of regard and good will, he left the vessel, and went into his canoe. The natives who were to return with the King, looked up to the vessel eagerly, with the most expressive countenances, and half dissolved in tears. This proof of delicate sensibility, and of proved affection, operated so strongly on the feelings of all aboard, that it was with much difficulty they summoned resolution enough to give three cheers at their final departure. Raa Kook remained, with a few of his attendants, to see them out of danger beyond the reef; but was so highly dejected, that the vessel had gone a great way before he thought of summoning his canoes to return. As he had been their first friend, the Captain gave him a brace of pistols, and a cartouch-box with cartridges; and the moment of separation being now come, he appeared so much affected, that it was some time before he could speak. Pointing to his heart, he said it was there he felt the pain of bidding them adieu. He endeavoured to converse with Lee Boo, his nephew; but being unable to proceed, he precipitately

I

went

went into the boat, and giving them an expressive glance, as if his mind was convulsed, he instantly dropped a-stern; and thus terminated our connection with the natives of Pēlew, after a residence among them from Sunday the tenth of August, 1783, to Wednesday the twelfth of November following.

CHAP. LXXVIII.

CHARACTERS OF ABBA THULLE AND RAA KOOK.

IT may not be unseasonable, while the amiable behaviour of these two respectable characters, Abba Thulle and Raa Kook, is fresh in the recollection of the reader, to make a few general observations on their different characters.

Never was a prince more formed to attract and retain the love and admiration of his subjects than Abba Thulle; his appearance majestic, he commanded with authority; while his affability and easy access rendered him a semi-deity to all his subjects. In one of his councils, there was as
 2 much

much (we had almost said more) respect paid to his naked unadorned person, as to a European potentate, amidst all his trappings and pageantry, from the surrounding sycophants. His nice honour and quick feelings were very discernible on many occasions; never was there a reproof more delicate and yet more poignant, than what he gave the English on occasion of the late affair with the musquets. He was far from one of those harmless *nothings*, who hurt nobody because they have not a sense of injuries; while the warmth and sensibility of his heart won the love of all around him, his dignity of manner, and propriety of conduct, taught them to approach him with respect. He possessed a contemplating mind, and few objects came within his observation, without being attentively considered. The prosperity of his subjects, was the principal object with him. It was this that led him to part with his son Lee Boo, whom he tenderly loved—for this he was at so much pains in examining every thing about the English, that might be serviceable to his people—in fine, his whole attention was engaged in forming and executing plans for the good of the nation and individuals. In domestic life he shone remarkably, and took a particular charge of all his own relations; the misbehaviour

viour of his nephew, in an affair of some importance, seemed to give him the greatest pain ; while, as the husband and parent, his heart seemed awake to every finer feeling which adorns humanity.

Accident only has made him acquainted with a few of the rest of mankind ; and that accident he considered as the happiest of his life ; we may perhaps never hear of him again, but, judging from what is already known, he may justly be considered as one of the best of men and of kings.

His brother Raa Kook was a prince of so universally engaging demeanor, and whose every action expressed something so truly valuable, that Englishmen or natives equally admired him. He was so much a friend to the English, that it may be suspected their account of him is partial ; therefore little shall here be said, and that little not exaggerated.

His natural temper was cheerful and pleasant, though without that mimicry and humour for which his brother Arra Kooker was remarkable ; at the same time he was far from averse to a good hearty laugh when a proper occasion offered. As commander in chief, he was beloved by them all : he dispensed his orders calmly and smoothly,
but

but would not tolerate neglect. No man better understood the necessity of strict discipline; so that while he encouraged his inferiors to use all becoming freedom with him, he kept them at that *proper* distance, which is the true key to cheerful obedience. In principles of honour, he was by no means inferior to his brother; and not only wished that the English should hold *him* in an honourable point of view, but all the nation; thus it was, that he could not bear the least idea of pilfering among them, for, whilst we were there, if any thing was missing, Raa Kook soon discovered and punished the delinquent. One day, a chief Rupack sought a cutlass from Captain Wilson in his hearing; the frown instantly appeared, nor would he suffer it to be given him. He was exceedingly delicate in receiving favours himself; and though, from his particular disposition in enquiring after causes and effects, many things about the English were highly prized by him, he was particularly attentive, that nothing should betray any desire for what he thought might not be proper to be given.

His deportment in his family was remarkably pleasant, even to a degree which many in this age of dissipation and stoicism might reckon silly; but let it be noticed, that though the finer feelings

ings shone in the natives of Pelew, to a length many in Britain would call effeminate—yet in fatigue, pain, distress, and death, they appeared as heroes indeed.

Before we proceed to mention the future fortunes of our navigators, the following chapter is introduced, to mention such observations on the manners and customs of these amiable people, as are thought interesting.

CHAP. LXXIX.

A GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE PELEW ISLANDS—PRODUCTIONS—INHABITANTS—DRESS—DISPOSITIONS—MANNERS—RELIGION—GOVERNMENT, &c.

AS the Antelope was not a vessel fitted out for discovery, and furnished with scientific gentlemen, qualified for making many philosophic observations, the naturalist, or philosopher, must wait the issue of more particular discoveries and enquiries. Men distressed with the dread of perpetual exile, and whose attention was almost wholly occupied about their deliverance, were not the persons

persons for tracing nature accurately in her various appearances and effects.

The Pelew Islands, or, as some call them, the Palos Islands, are situated between 130 and 136 degrees of east longitude from London, and between five and nine degrees north latitude.

They are plentifully covered with wood of various kinds; such as the *cabbage tree*, *ebony*, and a species of the *manchineel*, the sap of which, when it touches the skin, occasions an immediate swelling and blistering. This was the tree which they considered as *unlucky*.

But their three most remarkable trees we, in Britain, are utter strangers to. One is a very pretty tree, and upon boring a hole in it a thick substance like cream distills from it. Another is very like a cherry tree, in its manner of branching. It has a very thin cover, which is not properly a bark, being as close in the texture as the inner wood, which is very hard. None of the English tools could stand to work it. In colour it is very like, though still prettier than mahogany. The last is like an almond tree; the natives call it *carambolla*. Beetle-nuts, yams, cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit, are their staple articles of livelihood, about which they are principally concerned; and a few oranges, lemons, and

the jamboo apple (those brought to Lee Boo on his departure) are their delicacies. They have no grain. The islands are in general well cultivated, as the natives spare no pains. All their labour consists in fishing and the cultivation of their grounds. Every man had his own piece of ground so long as he inclined to dwell there; but if he left it for another, it returned to the King, as chief proprietor, who bestowed it on the next that applied for it. One thing was very discernible, that every man had his own canoe, which he kept sacred.

It has already been mentioned, that there are no quadrupeds on the island, except rats. Birds of different kinds were observed flying about, some of them very beautiful, but the greater part of them are those which are known by the name of tropic birds. Whether from their peculiar kinds, or the echoing in the wood, is not easily determined, but the English were ready to think their notes had a very peculiar melody. One, in particular, was uncommonly sweet; but though the sound appeared quite at hand, none of the birds could be noticed.

But we must not omit to mention, that the English have probably taught them a lesson which may be of great service to them. The islands abounded

abounded with common cocks and hens, which the natives considered as a very useless animal, and therefore took no pains about them, but left them to wander wild through the woods. At times they would have eaten their eggs, provided they were to their taste, that is, not fresh or lately laid; but if containing an imperfect chicken, they were delicious. They were now, however, taught to eat the flesh of fowls, which they soon found to be a very palatable food.

Few parts of the globe are so well supplied with fish of all kinds, particularly mullets, crabs, oysters, muscles, &c. but the fish most esteemed among them is the shark, the greater part of which they reckon delicious. Several kinds of shell fish they eat quite raw, in preference to dressed. They have few fresh-water fish, as there are no rivers on the islands, only a few pools and small springs, &c. They have no salt, and have little conception of sauce or seasoning to any thing they eat. Sometimes they boil both fish and vegetables in salt water, but this was no improvement; but when they eat any thing raw, they squeeze a little orange or lemon juice upon it.

They get up betimes in the morning, and their first work is to bathe. There are particular places appointed for this; and a man dares not approach the women's bathing places, without

previously giving a particular halloo, of which, if no notice is taken, he may proceed, but if they halloo in return, he must immediately retire. They breakfast about eight, and proceed to public business or any other employment till noon, when they dine ; they sup about sun-set, and very soon after retire to rest.

The reader will have observed frequent mention is made of sweetmeats in this narrative, a more particular account of which may be proper. They had various sorts. One was prepared by scraping the kernel of the cocoa-nut into a pulp, and then mixing it up with orange juice and sweet drink. This sweet drink is a composition of the juice of sweet canes, which the island produces plentifully. This mixture they generally simmered over a slow fire, which when warm they made up into lumps. It soon turned so hard that a knife would scarce cut it. This the English called *Choak-dog*, but the natives called it *Woolell*. Another sort is made up of the fruit of the tree just mentioned, like the almond tree ; and on one occasion they presented Captain Wilson with some liquid sweetmeats, which they prepare from a root somewhat similar to our turnips.

The natives are in general stout, well made, and athletic. Many of them appeared to be uncommonly

monly strong. They are in general about the middle size, and universally of one tinge as to colour, not wholly black, but of a very deep copper colour. The men have their left ear bored, and the women both. They wore a particular leaf, and at times an ornament of shell in the perforated ear. Their noses are also ornamented, by a flower or sweet shrub, stuck through the cartilage between the nostrils. This custom is not peculiar to Pelew, but is found in many eastern nations, and probably proceeds from their great desire for sweet scents; and though at first it appeared rather disagreeable, from want of use, it is certainly a more pleasant and becoming refreshment to the nose, than the use of tobacco either by snuffing or plugging.

Their teeth we have already mentioned are died black; but the English could never learn the method it was done, nor more about it than that it was accomplished by means of some herbs when young, and the operation was very painful. The tatooing the body is also done in youth, though not altogether in childhood.

The only appearance of any thing like dress among these natives is in the female sex, who in general wear a piece of mat, or the husks of coca-nuts died, about nine or ten inches deep,

round their waist. Some of these aprons are very neatly made, and ornamented with beads, &c. Abba Thulle's daughter, Erre Bess, gave Henry Wilson a present of a very neat one to carry to his little sister.

From the most attentive observations and enquiries the English could make, they were able to collect, that the inhabitants of Pelew believed in one Supreme Being, and a future state of rewards and punishments, but had few religious rites or ceremonies.

It was very clear that they had some strong fixed ideas of *divination*. When Lee Boo set out to sea, he was for several days uncommonly sick; and he then told Mr. Sharp, he was sure his father and friends were very sorry for him, for they knew what he underwent. He was prepossessed with the same notion when dying, as we shall soon have occasion to mention.

That they understood the spirit existed after death, Lee Boo declared, while he was in Britain. For when Captain Wilson informed him, that the intention of going to church was to reform men's lives, and that they might go to heaven; he replied, that, at Pelew, bad men stay on earth, and good men grow very beautiful, and ascend into the sky.

One particular mode of divination was observed, and considered to be peculiar to the King, as none but he used it. They have a plant, not unlike our bulrush, by splitting the leaves of which, and applying them to the middle finger, he judged of the success of any occurrence of moment. Before the first expedition to Artin-gall, it was noticed that the answer was very favourable; but, when about to sail on the second, the oracle did not appear altogether so agreeable. Abba Thulle, therefore, would not suffer them to enter their canoes, until he had twisted his leaves in such a manner, as he thought they appeared more favourable.

The general character of these natives of Pelew is now pretty well imprinted on the reader's mind, a very few additional observations are therefore necessary. Humanity is the prominent feature in the picture. The English were cast upon their territories, in a state the most helpless that can well be conceived; twenty-seven men, without even common necessities of life, entirely dependent on their bounty; fed, supported, assisted in their labours, and every thing done for them that was in their power. Let us only for a moment consider the hourly bounty which was poured in upon them, not of their useless provender, but,

as the English had many occasions to observe, their best provisions were given to their strangers, while many perhaps were scanty enough at home. Only recollect the parting scene. See the crowding canoes holding out presents, not the distant effects of complaisance, but the warm effusions of philanthropy!—Could ostentation, pride, or the hope of retribution, influence them? By no means. It was kindness to men they never expected to see again.

Their native politeness was constantly observable; possessing a degree of curiosity, beyond any of the South-sea natives. They never knowingly intruded, when it was inconvenient. In them it was evident that *good manners* are the natural result of *good sense*.

The attention paid by the men of Pelew to their wives, is very uncommon in most parts of the world; and even a British husband might at times get a lesson.

Their marriages seemed to consist in a serious, solemn contract, without any formal ceremony; but they are strictly faithful to one another, and the utmost decency of behaviour is uniformly supported. A plurality of wives is allowed, though they generally confine themselves to two, a Rupack three, and the King five. They name
the

the children soon after they are born, without any ceremony. One of Abba Thulle's wives bore him a son while the English were there, which he named *Captain*, to the memory of Captain Wilson. They are far from being naturally lascivious, and the utmost decency is preserved among the natives. One of the sailors endeavoured to pay his addresses to a female, but was rebuffed in a manner that prevented any further attempts.

They are in general an active, laborious set of people, possessing the greatest resolution in cases of danger, patience under misfortunes, and resignation at their death.

Except a few Rupacks, there was little subordination of rank, (and of that we will speak presently;) consequently their employments were pretty much the same. Fencing their plantations, planting their yams, making hatchets, building houses and canoes, mending and preparing fishing tackle, forming darts and warlike weapons, with domestic utensils, and burning chinam, may be said to comprize the whole round of their employments.

Those who had a particular turn for mechanical operations, or any uncommon pieces of work, they called *Tacklebys*; it was to them the King so often
gave

gave particular orders to observe the building of the schooner. Idleness was tolerated in none; the women were as laborious as the men, and the King and Rupacks were as much employed as any. Abba Thulle was the best maker of hatchets in the island; and generally laboured at them when disengaged from affairs of state. They had no idea of unemployed time, and therefore it is, that without the proper tools for finishing a fine piece of work, practice had taught them, even with their coarse implements, to execute what a British artist could not have conceived practicable. Their mats, baskets and ornaments are so curiously wrought, that, when their simple tools are considered, the ingenuity is more to be admired than much superior productions, executed under the advantages which European mechanics enjoy.

That equality of station which appeared evidently among them, and ignorance of those luxuries which civilization introduces, proved no inconsiderable source of happiness to them. The one prevented that ambition which is often so destructive to society, and the other those cares which affluence awakens. In all the connection which the English had with them, robbery or rapine were never named among them. Nature,
it

it is true, allowed them little, but that little they enjoyed with content. Human nature here shone in most amiable colours. Men appeared as brethren. Uninformed, and unenlightened, they grasped at nothing more than competency and health. Linked together as in one common cause, they mutually supported each other. Courteous, affable, gentle and humane, their little state was cemented in bonds of harmony.—But a short account of their government may be proper.

Abba Thulle, the King, was the chief person in the state, and all the homage of royalty was accordingly paid to his person. He was supreme in the greater part of the islands which came within the observation of the English; but Artingall, Pelelew, Emungs, and Emellegree, appeared to be independent, though, from any thing that could be observed or learned, their form of government was similar.

The general mode of making obeisance to the King, was by putting their hands behind them and bowing towards the ground; and this custom prevailed not only when passing him in the streets and fields, but when they passed the house in which they supposed him to be. His carriage and demeanour was stately and dignified, and he supported

ported his station very becomingly. He devoted the forenoon to public business, and decided every matter of state by a council of Rupacks. They assembled in a square pavement in the open air, the King being placed in the centre, on a stone of larger size than those of the Rupacks. They seemed to deliver their minds with freedom, as matters occurred; and the assembly was dissolved by the King rising up.

The afternoon was devoted to receiving petitions, hearing requests, and deciding controversies. These, it may easily be supposed, seldom occurred; for as their property was small and of little value, and as there were no *lawyers* nor their emissaries to foment disputes, the proper barriers of right and wrong were easily defined. Wrangles and fighting seldom happened, for even a dispute between children was checked by a severe frown, and their impetuosity bridled. When any real injury was done by any one to his neighbour, it was a pleasing sight to see how justice was administered. Their laws were the simple dictates of conscience, as to right and wrong between man and man. No *rhetoric* or enticing words of wisdom were employed to mask vice under the cloak of virtue. None of these subterfuges could be employed, whereby fraud
and

and oppression could be screened. Oaths were unknown, and the simple dictates of truth directed the judge; nor were there any *punishments* of a *corporal* kind. To be convicted of injuring a neighbour, was to them more galling and disgraceful than any pillory yet invented by British ingenuity.

Messages were transmitted to the King with great ceremony. The messenger never was admitted into the presence, but delivered it to an inferior Rupack, who delivered the message to the King, and brought his answer.

The General was next in authority to the the King, and acted for him in his absence. He summoned the Rupacks to attend when needed, and had the chief command of all the forces; though it was observed, that in actual engagement, when the King was present, he himself officiated.

The General succeeded the King in case of his death, and on his demise, Arra Kooker; when the sovereignty would again revert to Abba Thulle's eldest son, then to Lee Boo, and so on. The King had always an attendant, who though not so high in office as the General, was more constantly about his person. He was considered as the principal minister, and a man of judgment.

He

He never bore arms, nor went on the warlike expeditions. It was remarked, that he had only one wife, and never invited any of the English to his house.

The Rupacks were very numerous, and considered in the same light as the nobility are in Britain. They were of different orders. They all attended the King on command, every one bringing with him a certain number of dependants, with their canoes, spears and darts.

The reader will be apt here to trace a similitude to the feudal system; but as the knowledge the English acquired of these matters was very superficial, nothing very conclusive can be ascertained. These, and many other matters, must be left for time to develope. All that can be said further at present is, that, whatever was their precise mode of government, it was wonderfully adapted for the people.

All the islands appeared populous, but the number is not easily conjectured. There were four thousand active men in the expedition against their enemies; and it was evident, many more were left at home, not being needed.

The method they took for building houses, was very ingenious. They raised them three feet from the ground, in order to prevent damp.

This

This space they filled up with solid stone, and overlaid it with thick planks as a floor. The walls were built of wood, very closely interwoven with bamboos and palm leaves, so that no cold nor wet could possibly come through. The roof was pointed in the same manner as village-houses are in this country. Their windows come down on a level with the floor, answering for doors also; and have a sort of shutters, which they fill up the chasm with, when necessary. Their fires are kindled in the centre of the room, (for all the house is in one room) the fire-place being sunk lower than the floor, with no timber below it.

Their canoes are admirable workmanship. They are made of the trunks of large trees, in the same manner as those throughout the South Seas, but with surprizing neatness. They ornament them with shells, and paint them red. They are of different sizes, but the largest will not carry more than thirty people. The natives row with great ability, infomuch that the canoes, made on purpose for swift sailing, seem scarcely to touch the water, moving with a velocity unknown to our boatmen.

Their domestic implements are few in number, and very simple. They are the evident productions

tions of necessity, well calculated to answer the ends intended, without much ornament.

Their knives are made of shells, which they sharpen to such an edge as fully answers all common purposes. Their drinking cups are made of cocoa-shells, which they polish with great art.

Their articles for ornament were far from being numerous. The King had a very fine tureen, somewhat in shape of a bird, and finely ornamented with various devices, very neatly cut out upon it. This he made a present of to Captain Wilson. It held about thirty-six English quarts.

The tortoise-shell they wrought into various little dishes, spoons, trays, and other vessels. The shell they have in these islands is of a very beautiful kind, but their manner of working it the English could never get an opportunity of observing.

CHAP. LXXX.

OF THE ANTELOPE'S PASSAGE TO ENGLAND;
WITH ANECDOTES OF PRINCE LEE BOO.

THE English were now once more on the way to all they held dear; and, having wiped away the tear of a friendly farewell, proceeded on their voyage with cheerfulness.

The principal person that will figure in the few remaining pages of this narrative, is the highly valued *Prince Lee Boo*, a youth of the most remarkable abilities, and in whose history every reader must feel interested.

He had thrown himself freely into the protection of strangers, deserting his native country, his friends, his all, trusting to the honour of a handful of men, concerning whose existence he had but a few weeks before been utterly ignorant.

Captain Wilson instructed him as to decency in his appearance, and desired he would dress as they did. He did so; but soon threw off the coat and jacket, as insupportably cumbersome. He still, however, retained the trowsers, as decency

cency required, and would never afterwards part with them. As they began to advance into a colder climate, he soon resumed the coat and jacket.

His notions of delicacy, from what had been told him, and from what he observed among the English, gradually increased, so that he would not so much as change any part of his dress, unless when by himself. He washed himself several times a day, and kept his clothes and every thing about his person very clean.

Not far from the Island of Formosa they fell in with several Chinese fishing vessels and small craft, and soon after anchored near the high land called the *Asses Ears*. Having there engaged a pilot to conduct them to Macao, they arrived there next day.

The Governor paid Captain Wilson and his crew all manner of attention, and sent plenty of provisions of all kinds to the men on board the ship, informing them, at the same time, that peace was now re-established in Europe.

Captain Wilson, Lee Boo, and the officers, got lodgings appointed them on shore, except Mr. Benger, who took the command on board. An express was immediately forwarded to the
Company's

Company's *supra-cargoes* at Canton, informing of their arrival and situation.

Mr. M^cIntyre an old acquaintance of Captain Wilson's paid them uncommon attention, and insisted on their lodging in his house. He had a Portuguese Gentleman in company with him, who invited them to his house, on their way to Mr. M^cIntyre's, and that principally on Lee Boo's account, with whom he was greatly taken, and wished to introduce him into his family. His house was therefore the first into which Lee Boo entered, and his surprize on entering it cannot be easily described. The rooms, the furniture, and ornaments, all severally crowded so many new objects on his mind at once, that he was perfectly lost in amazement. It was remarkable, however, that, amidst all his confusion, his behaviour was to the greatest degree easy and polite; and as he observed, that he occasioned the same surprize in others that they did in him, he very politely permitted them to examine his hands, described the tatooing, and appeared pleased with the attention paid him.

On their way to Mr. M^cIntyre's, Lee Boo displayed his native benevolence very remarkably. Observing the poor Tartar women, with their children

children tied to their backs, begging, he distributed among them all the oranges and other things he had about him.

When they reached Mr. McIntyre's it was late, so that the table was covered for supper, and the room elegantly illuminated. A new scene here burst upon him—the whole seemed to him a scene of magic. It is impossible to particularize every thing with which he was remarkably fascinated. A large mirror, at the upper end of the room, rivetted his attention for a while. He saw his complete person, and supposed it to be somebody behind, very like himself. He looked, laughed, and looked again, not knowing what to think. Indeed the mirror had a surprising effect on more than Lee Boo. The Englishmen had seen every one his neighbour's face, during all their distress, but nobody had seen his own. The hollow-eyed, long-visaged appearance they now made, to what they formerly recollected, cast rather a melancholy impression upon their minds.

Next day Lee Boo spent mostly in examining Mr. McIntyre's house, in which he found abundance of new objects to surprise him. The other gentlemen in the mean time went about purchasing such little commodities as they stood in need of, and every one brought in some little trinket

trinket with him for Lee Boo. Among the rest was a string of large glass beads, which almost distracted the poor prince with surprise and joy. He conceived himself possessed of greater treasures than all the Pelew islands could afford; he ran to Captain Wilson enraptured with his property, and begged that a small Chinese vessel might be hired to transport them to Pelew, and desire his father might be informed the *Englees* had carried him to a fine country, from whence he would soon send him some other presents; at the same time adding, that if the persons Captain Wilson should employ, faithfully and expeditiously executed their trust, he would reward them with two glass beads.—Happy state of innocence, where the utmost ambition can be so easily satisfied.

While at Macao, Lee Boo had frequent opportunities of seeing people of different nations, but soon gave a decided preference to the English, especially the ladies. It has been already mentioned that there are no quadrupeds at the Pelew Islands, and that the Newfoundland dog left there was the first of the species they had seen. They called him *sailor*, which name Lee Boo now applied to every quadruped he saw. Horses were his great favourites, he called them *clow sailor*, or

great sailer. He would often go to the stable and stroke their mane and neck, and soon ventured to mount them. He intreated Captain Wilson to send a horse to his uncle Raa Kook.

In a few days Captain Wilson received letters from Canton; the supra cargoes desiring him to draw for what money he needed, and ordering the men to be supplied with every necessary in abundance. The kindness shewn them on this occasion by all ranks, at Macao and Canton, all the officers and men speak of in the warmest terms. Captain Wilson and his company took shipping for Whampoa in the Walpole, Captain Churchill leaving Mr. Benger to take care of the Oroolong, and dispose of her.

In a few days they arrived at Canton, having been kept in spirits all the way by Lee Boo, whose admiration at every new object, and sensible remarks at the same time, surprised all who had an opportunity of conversing with him. He was greatly surprised at the various dishes of meat which he saw successively set before them, alleging, that his father, though a King, was happy to serve himself with a few yams and coconuts; while here the gentlemen had a great many different dainties, and servants attending them while they were eating. Observing a man drunk,
he

he said he would not drink spirits, as it made him unlike a man.

An instance of Lee Boo's strong attachment to those he knew, may be here mentioned, which will serve to point out this striking feature, not in his character only, but in all the natives of Pelew. One day, while sitting at a window which looked towards the sea, he observed a boat making towards shore, in which were Mr. Benger and Mr. M'Intyre. His joy was so great, that he did not take time to tell Captain Wilson or any other in the room the cause of his emotion, but springing from his seat, flew to the shore in a twinkling. Immediately on their landing he shook hands with them so heartily, and with such expressions of affection, as won their warmest regard. They had disposed of the schooner for seven hundred Spanish dollars, which was considered as a very good price.

Lee Boo became an universal favourite wherever he appeared. His agreeable, good-natured, pleasant behaviour, made him acceptable in every company. He one day very much surprised a company of gentlemen with his dexterity in throwing the dart. A party was formed to have a trial of skill in the Factory-hall. They hung up a gauze cage, and a bird painted in the mid-

dle. They stood at a good distance, and with much difficulty hit even the cage. When Lee Boo's turn came, he took up his spear very carelessly, and, with the greatest ease, struck the little bird through the head. He had one day an opportunity of seeing some blue glass, which greatly delighted him. It was a colour he had not before seen. The gentleman, in whose house it was, made him a present of two jars of the same colour, which greatly delighted him. *Oh ! were it possible, he exclaimed, that my friends at Pelew could see them !*

As the time was now near at hand when the company's ships would sail for England, Captain Wilson laid before his people an account of the produce from the Oroolong, and other articles which had been sold; and giving to every one an equitable share, he addressed the whole company nearly as follows : " Gentlemen, the moment being now arrived when every one may to advantage follow his own inclination, I cannot part with you, without testifying my approbation at the spirited, the judicious, and the manly conduct you have preserved amidst our trying difficulties; and be assured, that, on my arrival in England, I will represent you to the Company

as entitled to their particular regard, and I make no doubt but they will reward your toils."

If mutual adversity will reconcile the most inveterate enemies, surely the sufferings of friends must rivet a more forcible affection; and every one now present appeared to feel the weight of the remark, for a tender concern was manifest in every countenance. The conduct of Mr. Wilson had been so mild and prudent, and his example so animating, they still wished him for their commander. But it was not now a time for choice. Necessity and reason pointed out their course. Lee Boo and the captain came home in the *Morse*, and the surgeon in the *Lascelles*; while others embarked in different ships.

What has already been mentioned concerning the amiable Lee Boo, has no doubt interested every reader in his history, in which we hope to be excused, if regard for a favourite subject should lead us to be at times triflingly minute, as some readers may think.

The *Morse* was commanded by Captain Elliot, with whom Lee Boo made himself very happy. His spirit of enquiry, concerning various objects which he saw, began now to be directed more to their utility than formerly; and he shewed no small anxiety to pick up as much knowledge as

possible, with regard to such articles as would be useful at Pelew. His method of keeping his journal is very noticeable. He had a string, on which he cast a knot for every remarkable object he wished to imprint on his memory. These knots he examined daily, and, by recollecting the circumstances which occasioned their being cast, he imprinted the transactions on his memory. The officers of the *Morse* humourously remarked, when they saw him referring to his hempen tablet, that he was reading his journal.

He was not forgetful of the crew of the *Oroolong*, about whom he made frequent enquiries. Early in the voyage he asked for a book, that with assistance he might learn the English alphabet, which was given him. At St. Helena he was surprised at the sight of the soldiers, and the cannon on the fortifications; and four men of war arriving during his stay there, afforded new matter of astonishment.

On being taken to see a school, he appeared so conscious of his own deficiency, that he begged he might learn like the boys. While here, he had also opportunities of riding on horseback, of which he was very fond. He galloped with great ease, and sat his horse very gracefully.

Before

Before the *Morse* sailed from St. Helena, the *Lascelles* arrived there, so that he had an interview with his first friend Mr. Sharp. He was exceedingly happy with that gentleman, for whom he had the greatest regard.

When the *Morse* approached the British Channel, the number of ships that passed, confounded his journal, and he was obliged to discontinue his memorandums. But, on landing at Portsmouth, the objects which met his view were so stupendous and grand, that he was involved in silent astonishment, asking no questions whatever.

The captain proceeded to London, impatient to see his family, and left *Lee Boó* under the protection of his brother; who, however, soon after set off in a stage-coach, with his innocent charge. Describing his journey, he said he had been put into a little house, which horses ran away with, and that though he went to sleep, he did not stop travelling.

On his arrival in London, he was not a little happy to meet with his Mentor, his new father, whom he was afraid he had lost. Being shewn his chamber, he could not conceive the use of the bed, it being a four-post one, and of course different from what he had seen on board. Before he would repose himself, he jumped in and out of it

several times, to admire its form, and intimated that here there was a house for every thing. It was all fine country, fine streets, fine coach, and house upon house up to the sky—for the huts at Pelew being only one story, he considered every floor here as a distinct house.

Captain Wilson introduced Lee Boo to some of the East India Directors, and to most of his friends, and at the same time shewed him the most conspicuous public buildings; but his prudent conductor kept him from stage and other exhibitions, lest the heat of the place might communicate the small-pox.

He was sent to an academy at Rotherhithe, where he was very assiduous in learning to read and write; and he soon became the favourite of all his schoolfellows from his gentleness and affability. During the hours of recess he amused his benefactor's family, by mimicking such peculiarities as he observed in the boys at school. He said that when he returned to Pelew, he would keep an academy himself; and he imagined the great men of his country would think him very wise when he shewed them their letters.

He always called his patron, captain; but he would address Mrs. Wilson no otherwise than his mother,

mother, although he was told to the contrary, conceiving it a tender expression.

When he saw the young asking charity, he was highly offended, saying they ought to work; but the supplication of the old and infirm met his natural benevolence—"Must give poor old man; old man no able to work."

About this time he appeared to be about twenty years of age, middle sized. His expressive countenance, great sensibility, and good humour, instantly prejudiced every one in his favour. His eyes were so strikingly expressive, that though he knew very little English, his meaning was easily understood.

This quickness of manner and readiness of apprehension were astonishing. A young lady, with whom he was one day in company, sat down to the harpsichord, in order to discover how it affected him. To the music he paid little attention, but he was greatly interested to discover how the sounds were produced. He at the same time sung a song in the Pelew style, but it was very harsh.

He was naturally polite. One day, at dinner, Mrs. Wilson desired him to help her to some cherries, when Lee Boo very quickly proceeded to take them up with his fingers. She pleasantly hinted his error, when he immediately took up a

spoon, his countenance at the same time being suffused with a blush.

Captain Wilson, one day, happening to rebuke his son for some trifling neglect in the presence of Lee Boo, the generous youth was not happy till he had joined their hands, which he did with the tears of sensibility streaming from his eyes.

He preferred riding in a coach to every other conveyance, as it allowed people, he said, an opportunity of talking together.

He was fond of going to church, because he knew it was a religious duty, the *object* and final *end* being the same both at Pelew and in England.

He was present at Lunardi's aerial ascension; and remarked, that it was a ridiculous mode of travelling, as it could be done so much easier in a coach.

He narrowly observed all plants and fruit trees, and said he should take some seeds of each to Pelew. Indeed, in all his pursuits, he never lost sight of what service they might be in his own country.

C H A P. LXXXI.

LEE BOO'S DEATH AND EPITAPH.

IN the midst of Lee Boo's innocent researches, he was taken ill of the dreaded small-pox. Dr. Smith immediately attended him, who, in the first stage of the disorder, predicted the fatal consequences which ensued. He cheerfully took the medicines that were administered, and willingly dispensed with the sight of Mr. Wilson, when he was told that he never had the disorder, and that it was infectious. In the midst of his illness, hearing that Mrs. Wilson was confined to her chamber, he cried—"What, mother bad—Lee Boo get up to see her:" which he actually did. Mr. Sharp, the surgeon of the Antelope, also attended him.

Viewing himself in a glass just before his death, he turned his head away in disgust at the appearance of his face, which was much swelled and disfigured. Getting worse, and sensible of his approaching fate, he fixed his eyes attentively on Mr. Sharp, and said—"Good friend, when you

go to my country, tell my father that Lee Boo take much drink to make the small-pox go away, but he die—that captain and mother very kind—all English very good men—was much sorry he could not tell Abba Thulle the great many fine things the English got.” He then enumerated all the presents he had received, which he begged the surgeon to distribute among his friends and the Rupacks.

The dying discourse of this child of nature so affected the man who attended him, that he could not help sobbing most piteously, which Lee Boo observing, asked—“Why should he cry so, because Lee Boo die?”

Thinking Mrs. Wilson’s illness arose from his own, he would frequently cry out, she being only in an adjoining chamber, “Lee Boo do well, mother.”

The dreadful moment of separation being now arrived, he told Mr. Sharp he was going away; and yielded his last breath without apprehension, and with that native innocence and simplicity which had marked his every action.

The family, the servants, and those who knew him, could not withhold the tears of affectionate regard, when informed of the melancholy event.

The

The East-India Company ordered Lee Boo to be buried in Rotherhithe church-yard, with every possible mark of respect. All who knew him, with the pupils at the academy, attended the funeral; and the concourse was otherwise so great, that it might be supposed his good qualities had been publickly proclaimed, instead of being privately communicated. A tomb, with this inscription, was soon after erected by the East-India Company :

To the Memory
Of Prince Lee Boo,
A Native of the Pelew or Palos Islands;
And son to Abba Thulle, Rupack or King
Of the Island Cooroora *;
Who departed this Life on the 27th of December, 1784,
Aged 20 Years,
This Stone is Inscribed,
By the Honourable United East India Company,
As a Testimony of Esteem
For the Humane and Kind Treatment
Afforded by his Father to the Crew of their Ship,
The Antelope, CAPT. WILSON,
Which was wrecked off that Island
In the Night of the 9th of August, 1783.
Stop, Reader, stop! Let *Nature* claim a Tear;
A Prince of *mine*, Lee Boo, lies bury'd here.

* Cooroora is the proper name of the Island, of which Pelew is the capital town.

This

This amiable young prince, whose residence here was only five months, conformed himself to the English dress in every instance, except his hair, which he continued to wear after the fashion of his own country. He was of a middling stature; and his countenance was so expressive, that it depicted the best qualities of a virtuous mind. His eyes were lively and intelligent; and his whole manner gentle and interesting. He had the natural politeness of a gentleman, without the drudgery of study, or the observance of established forms of ceremony. After his death, it was found that he had laid by all the seeds or stones of fruit he had eat after his arrival, with a view to plant them at Pelew.

When we reflect on the unhappy fate of poor Lee Boo, with which the reader is now acquainted, the mind ranges to the habitation of his father Abba Thulle, who on a cord had tied thirty knots, as a *memento* that his son would return in thirty moons, or perhaps a few more, for which he was willing to make allowance. Those moons have long since performed their revolutions. The knots are untied; and yet no gladdening sail hovers round Pelew. Lee Boo is dead in reality; and though no more even in the tortured imagination of his expecting family, yet the sight of an

an European vessel, even at this distant period, would animate their hopes, and recall the fondness of past endearments. It will be a long time before the Ariel will reach this friendly, this hospitable shore ; when the joy of the King, to see a return of the English, will be so far overclouded by his parental disappointment.

But his mind is too noble, open, and generous, to entertain, for a moment, a suspicion that Captain Wilson could be guilty of inattention to Lee Boo, much less of baseness or ingratitude.

As a communication with the Friendly Isles of Pelew is to be renewed, there is every reason to hope that we shall yet receive a sequel to some of the preceding circumstances, with further particulars of a race of unenlightened people, whose sincerity, and strict adherence to the dictates of honour and religion, are at once a disgrace and a burlesque on the passions and pursuits of those, who consider themselves as much nearer the standard of perfection.

CHAP. LXXXII.

HUNTER'S ACCOUNT OF THE KINGDOM OF PEGU.

THOUGH many Europeans have visited the Eastern regions, and though considerable additions have been made to our stock of geographical knowledge by their labours, yet there are some countries, in that quarter of the globe, into which few travellers have penetrated, and with which we are very little acquainted.

Among the generality of mankind a desire of enlarging science is but a secondary consideration. The acquisition of wealth is the principal object which engages their attention; and, on that account, whatever countries appear incapable of gratifying their ruling passion, are, for the most part, neglected. We may, therefore, with great justice, say, that we are as much indebted to accident, as to any cause whatever, for great part of our knowledge respecting remote nations. The shipwreck of the *Antelope* discovered *Pelew*, and convinced us that there are a people on whom the light of truth never beamed; a people in a state of nature,

nature, whose bosoms glow with the noblest principles of benevolence, and who possess virtues which we should in vain seek for among some of the proud sons of Europe. An event nearly similar gave Mr. Hunter an opportunity of examining the kingdom of Pegu. In the year 1782, being on a passage from Bengal, in the service of the East-India Company, on board of a ship which was totally dismasted, and obliged to put into the river Syriam to refit, he endeavoured to procure, during his residence there, such information respecting the state of the country as the shortness of the time would permit.

Pegu is a kingdom of farther India, and is situated between the fifteenth and twenty-fourth degrees of north latitude. It is terminated on the west and south by the sea; on the south-east by the kingdom of Siam; on the north by that chain of mountains which forms the boundary of the Chinese empire on that quarter; and on the north-west by the kingdom of Ava. Its length is about six hundred miles, and its greatest breadth about three hundred and fifty.

C H A P. LXXXIII.

ON THE SITUATION AND CLIMATE OF PEGU.

THE whole country is low, and the land can only be seen at a very small distance from sea. Add to this, that the water is shallow a great way off from the coast, so that one gets into three or four fathoms before one is within sight of land. Thus a person who is unacquainted is much at a loss ; and a circumstance which, unless he is aware of it, will encrease his confusion, is this, that the chart published in our English Directory, in even the latest editions, lays down the entrance of the river twelve miles too much to the southward. Hence it comes, that, after a man has got into the latitude of the place, by the chart, he is surprised to find no land within the reach of his eye. This error is rectified in a new chart of Pegu, which is inserted in the last edition of the French *Neptune Oriental*. The tides, near the bar, at the new and full moon, rise about twenty feet perpendicular, and their flow is amazingly rapid.

From what has been said concerning the situation of this country ; and, still more, from the prospect

prospect one has, in going up the river, which is lined on both sides with thickets and marshes, one is naturally led to suppose, that it must be very unhealthy. There are, however, the strongest reasons to believe, that the person who should suppose so would form a most erroneous judgment. The natives are, perhaps, the most robust and muscular race of men that we meet with any where in India. They are seldom attacked by diseases ; and, what is still more to the purpose, Europeans, who have lived here many years, enjoy an uninterrupted good health. A person that has resided, even for a short time, in Pegu, would also join the testimony of his own sensations to all these other proofs of its salubrity. Even during the rains, which all over India make the most disagreeable and sickly time of the year, the air in this place is temperate, and has an *elasticity* unknown, at the corresponding season, in any other part ; which gives vigour to the animal system, and enables it to support a great degree of fatigue. Perhaps the rapid motion of the tides may account, in some measure, for the healthiness of the climate ; at least, I know of no other cause to which it can be ascribed.

CHAP. LXXXIV.

A DESCRIPTION OF THE NATIVES.

THE inhabitants of Pegu are of a swarthy complexion. Their features resemble those of the Malays. They have broad faces, large black eyes, flat noses, prominent cheek bones, and extremely large mouths. On their chins they wear a tuft of hair, but shave the remaining part of their beard. Like several other eastern nations, they consider jet black teeth as a very great beauty.

In their ears they wear various kinds of ornaments. One appears to be *peculiar* to this country. It is a thin plate of gold rolled up in the form of a quill, about the thickness of one's finger, which is thrust through a hole made in the usual part of the ear, large enough to receive it.

This description is chiefly applicable to the *Birmahs*, that is, the natives of Ava, or their descendants, who are very numerous, as the government is now in their hands.

The

The original inhabitants of Pegu have faces approaching more to the oval form, features more regular and softer, and their looks seem much more expressive than those of the Birmahs, with whom in other respects they nearly agree.

The Birmahs, however, who wish to distinguish themselves from the conquered people, employ a very singular badge for that purpose. The thigh of every Birmah, including his hip and knee, is of a jet-black, which has a very singular appearance; and this mark they receive in their childhood. It is made by the repeated application of an instrument, with a great number of sharp points, placed close together, something like that used in carding wool, till the part is entirely covered with drops of blood. After this they apply a liquid, of which galls is the principal ingredient. This excites a considerable degree of fever; and it is computed, by the natives themselves, that about two children out of five perish in consequence of the operation. Some persons of higher rank have, instead of this, their thighs covered with the representation of tigers, and other wild beasts, imprinted by a process similar to the former.

The men have long black hair on the top of their heads, over which some wear a white handkerchief

kerchief in the form of a turban. Others go with their heads bare, and decorate them with flowers. About their loins they wrap a piece of party-coloured silk, which is afterwards passed over the shoulder, and goes round the body.

CHAP. LXXXV.

ON THE DISPOSITION, MANNERS, RELIGION,
AND ARTS, OF THE INHABITANTS OF PEGU.

NO information is of greater importance to the philosopher, than that respecting the manners of rude and uncultivated nations. The more his knowledge of mankind is enlarged, the abler he will be to comprehend the operations of the human mind, and to account for that difference of character, which, independant of physical distinctions, separates the various tribes dispersed over the face of the earth.

A ferocious shyness renders all intercourse with some equally difficult and dangerous. Cunning is the prominent feature in others, and there are some who are distinguished not only by their frankness and affability, but even by their hospitality.

pitality. The people of Pegu seem to be of the latter kind.

In their behaviour to strangers, they are obliging, and shew a degree of frankness that one would by no means expect to meet in a nation whom we have been accustomed to look upon as barbarous. They express a great curiosity to see the manners of strangers, which makes them often come into their houses, and observe all that is doing, without appearing to be under any constraint. They also take pleasure in imitating the dress and behaviour of those who come among them, and appear highly delighted when a stranger imitates any of theirs. In return, if you go into their houses, you are received with great hospitality; the people are eager to find something that may give you satisfaction, and seem very happy when you shew any marks of being pleased. They have none of that strictness which distinguishes the other eastern nations; but will themselves conduct you, with the greatest alacrity, through every part of their dwelling. The merit of their complaisance is so much the greater on this account, that it cannot, in any degree, be ascribed to fear, as a stranger is here entirely in their power, and the people have a very high idea of their own military force and prowess.

The

The religion of these people is much the same as that of the Gentoos, and, among many other objects of worship, they pay adoration to evil spirits, which they endeavour to appease, and render propitious with presents, in the same manner as the Tonquinese and other neighbouring nations. Their priests are numerous, have considerable influence in the state, and live on the alms which they receive from the people. Their government is despotic, and going to law is attended with as bad consequences in Pegu, as in some countries of Europe. Of this the following instance is a proof. Two English gentlemen, having a trivial dispute, went before a judge, who condemned each party to pay triple the sum contested.

The arts seem to be in a very imperfect state in this country. Their agriculture is confined to the cultivation of rice. The farmers cover the ground three or four inches deep with water, through which the blade springs up, and it is soon after transplanted into another field, where it is suffered to grow and ripen. Pegu produces silk and cotton, and the natives have the art of making cloth of each of these materials, but they often combine both in one piece, and they dye the thread used for weaving of various colours, so that

that cloth made in this manner resembles that used in the Highlands of Scotland, and known by the name of Tartan.

There are no buildings of stone here but those set apart for religious purposes. The description of one, called the *Golden Pagoda*, is as follows. It is a circular edifice, or rather a polygon of a great number of sides, about thirty feet high, terminated above by a round spire of a very great height, which, however, differs from a cone in this respect, that a line drawn on its surface, from the apex to the base, is not a straight one, but forms a curve inwards, so that the whole approaches near to the form of a speaking trumpet. This spire is covered with gold, from which the Pagoda has its name, and at the top there is a ring, from which are suspended a number of small bells, that make a continual jingling noise by the agitation they receive from the wind. The building below is hollow, and there is one passage which leads into it; but this is shut up by an iron gate, which is never opened, except when some religious ceremony is to be performed. Round the building are placed on the ground a great number of stone figures, representing wild beasts of an enormous size.

CHAP. LXXXVI.

OF THEIR COMMERCIAL ARTICLES.

IF researches into the manners and customs of nations principally engage the philosopher, a knowledge of its productions will be the object of a commercial kingdom.

The chief article of trade which induces the European to visit Pegu, is Teak-wood, which abounds here more than in any other part of India. This tree grows to a great size, and, except that it is more flexible and not quite so hard, it resembles oak. It is used all over India, not only for making furniture, but also for the construction of vessels, as it has this advantage over every other kind, that it does not corrupt so soon in the water.

Tin and bees-wax are also articles of commerce here, and gold is produced in no contemptible quantity, but the exportation of it is not allowed, nor is it used for money. The same prohibition is extended also to salt-petre, which might be prepared

prepared in abundance, if permission could be got to export it.

With regard to the commercial advantages to be derived from this country, I am of opinion, that if permission could be obtained to export its gold, it would become a valuable branch of trade, as the Malay coast is at present the only part of India from which it is procured. The exportation of tin from Pegu is also great, but it might be greatly encreased. There seems, however, to be an insuperable bar to the progress of commerce in this country; the jealousy of the natives, and their aversion to have much intercourse with strangers. The Imperial Company, it is true, have a factory at Rangoon, surrounded by a wall, and upon which the colours of the company are hoisted; but vessels that come hither to trade, meet with a treatment equally mortifying as that to which the Dutch are forced to submit in Japan. As soon as they come to an anchor, the guns and rudder are carried on shore, and not delivered again till they have finished their business, and are about to depart.

As this behaviour has rendered the trade of Pegu much less considerable than it otherwise would have been, and retarded the advancement of the country, both in richness and civilization,

it will, doubtless, appear to be very impolitic; and yet, if independence is the greatest good that a nation can enjoy, we must confess their present conduct to be the wisest they could have pursued, as being the best calculated to preserve that invaluable possession. Any man who is acquainted with the means by which the European powers have obtained their establishments in Hindostan, will be convinced of the truth of this assertion. Under the pretence of trade, they obtained permission from the Sovereigns of the districts they visited, to build factories and forts, and to keep in pay a body of troops, both which they strengthened and augmented by degrees, under various pretexts, till they reduced to a state of dependence those very princes, to whose indulgence they were indebted for all their possessions. Is it then at all surprising that the Birmahs should be unwilling to encourage an intercourse, which they have seen to produce such fatal effects, and rather chuse to resign the advantages they might derive from an extensive commerce, than endanger their existence as an independent people? Happy nation! who are contented to enjoy the wealth which nature has, with liberal hand, bestowed on your soil, and know not the desire of foreign riches, and foreign luxuries, which has tempted
others

others to relinquish the more substantial blessings of liberty and independence. May you long continue to preserve, with jealous care, this your most precious birth-right, and reject, with disdain, the most splendid allurements, if they tend in the least to put it in danger.

CHAP. LXXXVII.

ON THE MANNERS AND CUSTOMS OF THE ARABS.

THE Arabs of the Desert follow the religion of Mahomet; but they have entirely disfigured it by the grossest superstitions. They lead a wandering life amidst the dry sands of Africa; and some bodies of them continually hover about the coast. They are divided into tribes, more or less considerable. Every tribe is sub-divided into hordes, and every horde encamps in those cantons which are most suitable for supplying pasture for the cattle; so that a whole tribe is never entirely united. They are almost all found intermixed with some hamlets of those of the Ouadelims, the Labdesseba, the Roussye, the Lathidierim, the Chelus, the Tucanois, the Ouadelis, &c. The two first are

the most formidable. They carry their ravages even to the gates of Morocco. They are strong, well-made men, robust and vigorous. In general they have woolly hair, long beards, savage looks, large hanging ears, and long nails like claws, which they always use in their wars. These Ouadelims, revengeful, arrogant, warlike, and thirsting for plunder, spread terror and consternation wherever they pass. All the tribes, however, are destitute of courage, unless more numerous than their opponents.

These people lodge, with their families, under tents, covered with a kind of coarse cloth made of camels hair, spun by the women, and wove upon small looms. Their furniture consists of two large leather bags, containing a few rags, and some pieces of old iron, three or four goats skins, if they can procure so many, in which they keep their milk and their water, several wooden basins, some harness for their camels, two large stones to grind barley, a smaller one to drive into the earth the pegs of their tents, an osier mat, which serves them for a bed, a coarse carpet as a covering, and a small kettle. The flocks of the tolerably affluent, consist of two or three he-camels, several she ones, a few sheep, and some goats.

The

The duty which these Arabs observe most scrupulously, is prayer, of which there are several kinds. The first always begins before sun-rising. Their Talbe is distinguished by a long beard, a piece of woollen stuff, half white and half crimson, floating round a body, dry and meagre by long fasting, the consequence of excessive laziness, and by a chaplet of enormous size ; he raises a loud and lamentable voice, as if that of a pious and contrite man, but which is only that of a hypocrite. Armed with a poignard, he seeks for a spot where his perfidious arm may give the fatal blow, which pierces the bosom of his neighbour, his friend, and even his brother. By certain sounds he informs the horde to range themselves under his banner, to hear the praises of their prophet. All immediately flock to him with holy respect ; but before he begins his prayer, they pull off a small kind of petticoat, which hangs from their girdle, and wrap themselves up in it, as well as in the other parts of their dress. The Talbe then bends himself towards the ground, removes with his hands the earth upon which his feet were placed, takes a handful of that which he has not trod upon, and, for want of water, rubs it over his face, hands, and arms, as far as the elbows, to cleanse his impurities ; a ceremony which the people ex-
E 4.
actly

actly imitate. Prayer ended, they remain some time seated on the ground, trace out with their fingers various figures on the sand, and turn them round their head, as if besprinkling themselves with holy water. These savages shew as much exterior piety and respect as any sect whatever. I do not, however, believe that it is possible to pay less regard to religion than they do, as soon as their prayers are finished. The women, who assist only at the morning and evening devotion, place themselves in the entrance of their tents, their faces turned towards the east.

Next to the first exercise of religion, comes the care of milking their flocks. They begin by the she-camels, giving them a great many blows with their feet, till they make them rise up. As soon as they are on their legs, they take off from their udders a kind of covering, made of ropes worked together, which is intended to prevent the young camels from sucking. The young one then runs up to its mother, and by its caresses, prepares her to yield her milk in greater abundance. The master and the keeper of the flock watch for the moment when the lips of the young camel are covered with a white foam, they then separate it from its mother, and each resting his head on different sides against the animal's belly,

belly, they press the udder, from which they sometimes draw five pints of milk, when the rains have rendered the earth fruitful.

One can scarcely conceive to what a length the female Arabs carry their coquetry. They divide their hair with the greatest art into tresses, some of which they suffer to float over their bosoms, and affix to them every thing they can find. I have seen some who ornamented them with shells, small keys, padlocks, rings, and buttons, taken from ship-wrecked sailors. When their hair is arranged in this manner, they cover it with a dirty cloth, which encloses the whole head, and even half the nose, and which is tied under the chin. To give more lustre to their eyes, they paint them all round with a large copper needle, which they rub upon a kind of blue stone. All their art in adjusting their dress consists in folding it with neatness, and making it keep its plaits, though they employ for that purpose neither pins, laces, nor sewing. That their dress may be complete, they must dye the nails of their feet and hands of a red colour. A Moore's, to be reckoned a beauty, must have long teeth sticking out of her mouth; the flesh from her shoulder to the elbow, loose and flabby, her body and limbs prodigiously thick; a heavy hobbling

hobbling gait, and bracelets like the collar of a Danish dog upon her arms and legs. In a word, from infancy they endeavour to efface those shapes for which they are indebted to nature, in order to substitute others, highly ridiculous and disagreeable. They have no other wardrobe than the articles I have already mentioned.

Could any one believe that such hideous and frightful females are jealous, and fond of propagating scandal? This, however, is the case. If one of them has occasion to borrow any thing from a neighbour, and if the husband happens to be in the tent, she veils her face, and presents herself at the entrance, with a timid and trembling air; but if her neighbour happens to be by herself, they begin to rail against all their acquaintances who are able to dress in a superior style*. The conversation is prolonged, a third neighbour arrives, who puts in her word also, so that the half of the day is spent in speaking ill of others, and they often separate, without recollecting what they had come to borrow. They

* If these ACCOMPLISHMENTS are the allowed characteristic of so refined a part of the creation, as the French and English ladies, why wonder that savages should evince a depravity in their manners, when judged by the touchstone of common sense or true politeness?

are also remarkably lazy, and fond of gormandizing. When they know that camels or goats flesh is roasting in any tent, they will expose themselves to every affront, in order to procure some of it. Their favourite part is the liver.

The men have almost the same faults. They will pass whole days stretched out on their mats, either asleep, or smoking their pipes.

They assemble, sometimes in the day-time, to relate their war-like exploits. Each mentions the number of enemies he has killed. For the most part the appellation of liar is instantly bestowed upon him who ventures to make an assertion ridiculously false, the dispute becomes warm, and the conversation is terminated by their daggers. They can never agitate the most indifferent subject without having their eyes sparkling with rage. Fury is displayed in all their gestures, and they never go about any of their domestic affairs without great noise and clamour.

Perfidy and treachery are also two vices inherent in every Arab, and on this account they never go out of their tents without being armed. They could never carry on business by granting written securities, for he who received a bond would assuredly be stabbed by the person who signed

signed it : they always carry whatever they have most valuable in a small leathern purse, suspended from their necks. Though in their tents they use neither locks nor keys, I have seen some who had small coffers ; but even these coffers, the contents of which in value seldom exceed half a crown, are an object of desire to a whole horde. In this respect I can except neither brother nor father, nor even the son of him who possesses it.

Young people are early accustomed to use a poignard, to tear out the bowels of their adversary with their nails, and to conceal a lie in an artful manner, under the veil of truth. Those who to these talents add the art of reading and writing, become the most dangerous monsters, as they acquire among their countrymen a much greater pre-eminence. It may be said, that they are familiarized with crimes from their infancy, and that they are taught to commit them with the same pleasure as if they were performing the most meritorious action.

According to the custom of the country, every stranger, of whatever tribe or canton he may be, known or unknown, must be treated with hospitality. If there are several travellers, each inhabitant must contribute something towards the expence of entertaining him. All without distinction

tion go to meet him, congratulate him upon his arrival, and carry his baggage to the bottom of the bush which is destined to shelter him during the night; for it is an established rule that no stranger can be admitted into their tents. When this ceremony is ended, all sit down around their new guest, and interrogate him respecting the country from which he has come; whether such a tribe have evacuated the spot in which they were encamped; whether he met with others in the nearest or most remote cantons; and, lastly, whether he found much pasture in the places which he traversed? When he has answered all these questions, they ask to what tribe he belongs; but they never enquire after his health, until they have satisfied themselves respecting every other point which they wish to know.

If the stranger be acquainted with no person in the horde which he visits, the richest in it must always maintain him while he stays. The traveller receives a large basin of milk, and some barley meal mixed with the same liquid boiled, or with water, when it can be procured. If the visitor can read, he has the honour of repeating the prayers. In that case the Talbe of the hamlet places himself close by him, as master of the ceremonies. All his entertainment is confined to this,

this, if he be a stranger of whom little is known ; but if he has friends in the horde, and if he is considered as rich, a ram or a fat sheep is killed to regale him. The wife prepares the repast, and, before she bakes the meat, she separates the fat from it, which she serves up raw. When the flesh is baked, she begins by putting her husband's share on one side, after which she sets apart certain portions for such of his friends as he lives with upon good terms. To be wanting in this duty, would be an unpardonable omission. At length she displays with great care, upon a little straw, the part destined for the traveller. The Arab who treats is always followed by a Christian slave or negro, who carries upon his head the repast intended for the guest, which, however, is never served up till ten at night, though he may have arrived early in the morning. The custom is, to offer nothing but at night, and always by moonshine, or by the light of a large fire ; for the Arabs kindle fires in almost every season. The traveller never fails to press, with much earnestness, the person who accompanies the dish to do him the honour of partaking with him ; but the latter refuses as much as he possibly can.

The travellers in the morning continue their journey, without taking leave of any one. If this
mode

mode of receiving strangers, proceeded from the heart, it might shame the hospitality of much more polished countries; but they endeavour to avoid the trouble and expence which necessarily follows it: for when an unknown traveller appears, they place, at a small distance from their tent, a camel's saddle, a mat, a fusée, and a small package, which appear to be the baggage of some other traveller who has halted; but often these precautions do not prevent the stranger from depositing his luggage close by. Upon this the chief goes and informs him, that they belong to some Arab of a neighbouring hamlet. This, however, is a trick to which they are well accustomed, and on that account the visitor never stirs; but they revenge themselves for his importunity by giving him a very scanty allowance. He then looks around on every side, and, if he perceives a fire, he hastens thither, in hopes of finding either meat or some soup. At first he is very careful to conceal himself behind the tent, that he may hear what passes, and whether they are eating, for they are cunning enough, in order to prevent such visits, to remove quickly the three stones that support their kettle; and in that case he is sure of success, for they never see any one pass without inviting him to enter, and take a part of their entertainment.

ment. It often happens that, while he is running in search of a good supper, the effects which he deposited behind a bush are stole from him; but this is only a trifle, for on the first opportunity he indemnifies himself by serving others in the like manner.

It would be difficult to form a proper idea of the pride and ignorance of these Arabs. They not only consider themselves as the first people in the world, but they have the ridiculous vanity to believe that the sun rises for them only. They call the stars the children of the moon.

War, among these Arabs, is nothing but a species of robbery. They never undertake it but that they may indulge in laziness, after having pillaged their enemies flocks, and ravaged the fields before they are reaped. One day, while the plains were covered with the cattle of the whole hamlet, one of their keepers came running quite out of breath, to inform us* that large parties of the Oudelims were making their appearance on the tops of the mountains, and seemed as if they had a design to carry off our flocks. A large drum was then beat, all ran to their arms, and immediately set out to meet the enemy. Those

* M. de Briffon, and his unfortunate companions.

who were mounted on horses were soon lost in a cloud of dust. The camel, which takes very long steps, was no less nimble. Incited by the cries of the rider, it darted forward in the crowd, and with its teeth did as much execution as could have been done by the musquet. The Arabs never make an attack ranged in the order of battle. As many warriors as there are on each side, so many single combats are there, and he who overcomes his adversary takes from him his arms, or the animal upon which he is mounted, and retires precipitately with the fruits of his victory. Others, if they consider themselves as the stronger party, lay hold of one another, stab each other with their poignards, and sometimes tear out one another's bowels with their long nails. It often happens that those who possess great riches in cattle, find themselves reduced in one day to the most dreadful misery, and are stripped of their all by him who only the evening before possessed nothing. The weakest tribes being most exposed, they take care to live retired, and above all at a distance from the Oudelims, and the Labdesseba. I saw the latter, some time before I quitted the country, begin their robberies towards Arguem, which they call Agadir, and carry their ravages even to the gates of Morocco.

When

When the battle is finished, each party digs a certain number of graves, and the Talbes being desired to repair to the spot which has been drenched with the blood of their countrymen, hasten thither to discharge the functions of their ministry. These consist in articulating mournful sounds over a few handfuls of sand collected into a shell, in scattering them over the unhappy victims whom they are preparing for death, in pressing their thumbs against their foreheads, as if they applied some holy oil to them; and, lastly, in covering their bodies with a scarf and chaplet. When they have breathed their last, they stretch them out in the grave always on their left side, and with their faces turned towards the rising sun, as if to contemplate the tomb of their prophet. They then surround the grave with large stones piled one upon another, which serve as a monument to these military plunderers. The age of the warriors is distinguished by the quantity of ground which their bodies occupy. The women in tears go and roll themselves in the sand around these mausolea, and their gestures, their grimaces, and their sighs, uttered as it were in cadence, form a spectacle truly ridiculous. A traveller never passes before these tombs without laying down his stick; and, after repeating a short prayer, he raises around the tomb

tomb pyramids of stones, which indicate the vows he has offered up for the repose of the soul of the deceased.

After the funeral ceremonies, mournful and melancholy cries are heard throughout the whole hamlet. All unite their tears to those of the afflicted relations, and the tent of the deceased is removed to another place. All his effects are exposed to the open air, and the fattest ram falls under the murdering knife, to console his friends and relations, who offer up this sacrifice to him. When their repast is finished, they forget all their former animosity. The very day after a battle, I have seen them pay and receive reciprocal visits, and it is not uncommon to go and see the enemy whom he has wounded the evening before, and to discourse with him on the address which he displayed in watching a favourable opportunity to wound him. What I found most extraordinary was, that, to cure the deepest wounds, they never employed any thing but earth; from whatever place it might be taken, its effects were always the same. To allay pain, they have recourse to another expedient, which does not always succeed so well; this is to apply a red hot iron to the part affected. These Arabs, however, are subject to few diseases.

It sometimes happens that the fields of these barbarians are covered with plentiful crops ; but, instead of waiting till the grain attains to maturity, they cut it down, and dry it over hot, cinders, without reflecting that, by pursuing this method, they deprive themselves of that abundance which is necessary for the support of their families, and of straw to feed their cattle, which for the most part are reduced to the necessity of browsing on the dry branches of trees, and that they themselves are often obliged to eat the saddles and girths from the backs of their camels. I could not see, without regret, the little care which these barbarians take in preparing the earth. They leave the seed between heaps of stones, and among bushes, while their parched roots absorb all the moisture of the ground, on which the waters leave a kind of slime, very fit for accelerating vegetation. The person who is employed to till the ground, repairs to those spots which the rain has principally moistened, and scatters the seed here and there indifferently ; after which, he turns up the earth with a plough, drawn by one camel, which consequently makes a furrow of very little depth. If the moisture of the clouds happens to second this labour, each retires

retires with his portion to the interior part of their rocks.

Except crimes which they endeavour to commit during the night, these people never make a mystery of their actions. When one of them is desirous of undertaking a long journey, he informs the whole hamlet, who assemble to give their best advice to the traveller. Every one makes his speech, even children of fourteen, who speak with as much confidence as any old man who is discoursing on the most important business. These conferences, which are intended for no other purpose than to approve or condemn their countryman's project, are sometimes lengthened out to a whole month. The same thing happens every time that they are about to change the place of their encampment, or to conduct their camels to the borders of the sea. This last question is always the longest under deliberation, on account of the distance, and the hardships they suffer from the want of milk during the absence of these animals. It is true, that, in such cases, those who do not send their camels to the coast, supply those who are in want with milk, according to their own expression, "to be paid back in the like coin." Their joy is never manifested so much as on the return of their cattle.

When

When they come back, they are all loaded with goats skins full of water, which contracts in them a most disagreeable smell; but it is so scarce, that they drink it with the greatest avidity.

It is generally believed, in Europe, that a dog will become mad if he does not get water: in the deserts of Arabia they never drink at all, and feed upon nothing but excrements. Camels remain sometimes four whole months without tasting a drop of water, and goats and sheep drink still less. In short, if the Arabs had no horses they would perhaps never go in search of water; they would wait till it should drop from the heavens. Those rains, which generally fall in the month of October, diffuse universal joy, and great rejoicings are made at that epoch. Those who have never known the want of water, can form no idea of the transports which they experience upon these occasions.

A husband cannot put away his wife without having first obtained the permission of the elders of the hamlet, which is never refused. The women here are always treated with the most sovereign contempt. They never assume the name of their husbands, but preserve that which they received at their birth. Children even do not take the name of their father. In almost all
the

the hamlets which I had an opportunity of visiting there were only four or five different names ; they distinguished themselves by that of their tribe, or by any surname whatever. When an Arab sets out on a long journey, his spouse, after bidding him farewell, follows him about twenty paces from her habitation, throws after him the stone which is employed to drive the pegs of the tent into the earth, and, when it stops, buries it in the sand till his return. It is thus that she shews her good wishes towards him, and the vows she offers up for his happy return.

Though these women are very indecent in their discourse and gestures, they are extremely faithful to their husbands. I could never reconcile the tenderness which they shew to their children, with that barbarity which they display in correcting them, especially their daughters, who are very undutiful to their parents. It is upon them, however, that they lavish their opulence. They ornament them with ear-rings, and put rings of gold or silver upon their arms or legs. They add so much alloy to their silver, that it is scarcely any thing else but whitened copper. Those of the lower class make use only of the latter.

Nothing

Nothing can equal the joy of the Arabs on the birth of a son. It may readily be guessed, that the mother has neither the assistance of a midwife nor of a surgeon. For the most part she is alone at the time of her delivery.

Every woman who brings forth a son, in order to manifest her joy, blackens her face for the space of forty days; at the birth of a daughter she blackens only the half of her visage, and for no more than twenty days. Could these poor children observe the hideous appearance which their mothers exhibit, they would be frightened from approaching their breasts. I never saw so disgusting figures.

I could never help shuddering when I saw the severity with which these women treat their children, when yet at the breast. They lay them asleep by giving them severe blows upon the back, and, to prevent them from crying, they pinch them in a most unmerciful manner, and twist their skin with their fingers. I have seen some of these inhuman monsters set out the very day upon which they were delivered, in order to encamp at the distance of fifteen or twenty leagues. They are placed without any distinction in a kind of a cradle, which is fixed upon the top of a camel's load, and, as they are very conspicuous in this situation,

situation, they endeavour to dress themselves in the best manner they can, and to eclipse each other's finery: for this purpose they ornament the camel's body with several bandages of scarlet cloth, and with a few white rags. The four sticks, which form the frame of the cradle, are adorned with leaves of copper, or of silver gilt.

It is generally the women who pull up the poles of the tent, when their husbands have resolved to change the place of their encampment; they also load the camels under the inspection of their masters. When the husband mounts on horse-back, it is the wife who presents him with his spurs, and though she fall and bruise herself, it is of little importance, provided, on his arrival, he finds her ready to serve him with a basin of butter-milk.

I have been often shocked to see one of these Arabs (who, not being rich enough to purchase a horse, had mounted upon the bales on the back of his camel) leave to dismayed females the care of arranging the load which had tumbled down, whilst he, with the utmost indifference, was reposing himself behind a bush. Nothing can be more arrogant than an Arab to his wife, nothing more humble than one of his wives in his presence. They are even excluded from the com-

pany of their husbands at their meals ; as, soon as they have served they retire, until their tyrants are pleased to call them to give them what they have left. An Arab cannot, without violating the rules of decency, enter the tent of any of his neighbours on any account whatever. When he has occasion to speak with him he calls him out, and the wife, when she hears the sound of his voice, immediately puts on a veil, and she does this even when she passes one. A husband would be deficient in politeness did he, on entering his tent, lay himself down upon the mat used by his wife ; he cannot enjoy that privilege until she has retired to rest. In short, they are abundantly complaisant towards their wives while they are big with child. There are few families in which there are not five or six children, and as a plurality of wives is permitted, it may readily be supposed how much these people must multiply. There exists, however, no jealousy between females. They live all under the same tent, and see upon whom their husbands are fondest of bestowing their favours.

The tent set apart for the reception of a new-married couple, is distinguished with a small white flag. On the wedding-day the husband orders a camel to be killed to regale the company, and both the married and unmarried women, without

out any distinction assemble round the drummer. The latter, seated on the ground, beats upon his instrument with one hand, and with the other, forming a kind of speaking trumpet, accompanies the sound of his drum with dreadful howlings, and with the clanking of a chain, which he moves with his arm.

One person only dances to this agreeable music. She agitates her body in the most singular manner, and with her arms floating before her, forms a number of gestures, while all the spectators beat time with their hands.

CHAP. LXXXVIII.

AN INGENIOUS FRENCH GENTLEMAN'S DESCRIPTION OF THE MANNERS AND CHARACTER OF THE TURKS, A. D. 1784.

I HAVE employed two whole letters in describing the amusements of the Turks. I have not, however, made any mention of their manners and national character, because I deferred that subject till a longer residence among them should make me better acquainted with them; but, as I depart this evening, I cannot quit the country without endeavouring, at least, to give

you some idea of the people who inhabit it. The Turks, formerly a fierce and warlike people, appear at present to have assumed that mild and calm disposition which distinguishes the nations of Asia. The spirit of peace, which forbids the Bramins to take away the lives of animals, seems equally to inspire the inhabitant of the Bosphorus. You have doubtless heard of the care which is taken at Constantinople of dogs and cats, which abound in the streets of that capital. But these animals are not the only ones which lay claim to the liberality of the Turks; an infinite number of doves and pigeons, which peaceably take up their abode upon the roofs of all the houses, go and meet every bark loaded with grain, and seem as if they loudly demanded their due, which is fixed at a measure from every sack. The aquatic birds, with which the channel is covered, seldom remove from their place till the oar is about to touch them; and their nests are respected even by children, who, in every other country, would be their avowed enemies. In short, the mutual confidence established between man and animals, seems sometimes to carry the observer back to the infancy of nature; but what will, no doubt, prepossess you in favour of the Turks, is their respect for trees. To cut them is an enormous crime, which

which excites the murmurs of the whole neighbourhood, and on that account there is nothing which they will not do to avoid it. I have often seen shops built round a large plane tree, which seemed to rise from the roof, and which covered them with its foliage, or walls intersected by branches which the owners could not persuade themselves to lop off. Old trees are generally surrounded by a bank or dyke, which serves to cover and defend their roots. Young ones are sheltered by mats, and this even in fields which are common, and the property of no one in particular.

Another point, in which, on the first view, the Turks appear to approach other eastern nations, is their taste for pomp and shew. The Grand Signior's excursions upon the water, his march to the Mosque, and the departure of the caravan for Mecca, are so many grand spectacles which it will be sufficient only to name, to convey an idea of magnificence. But this pomp, at Constantinople, must be considered rather as proceeding from etiquette than from taste. Those who are not obliged by their officers, exhibit very little shew. A man of the greatest fortune often inhabits a house, the outside of which scarcely announces him to be in easy circumstances,

cumstances, and he reserves luxury for the apartments of the women, who in their turn ornament themselves only for him. *Their maxim is, that one ought to enjoy without seeming to enjoy.* Hence that philosophy so mild, which is not to be found but in the writings of the orientals, who do not express themselves in brilliant paradoxes but by striking apologues. Poetry is employed there only to bring one continually to nature, by objects of comparison selected from its most beautiful productions. Allegory, invented in the east to shelter one's thoughts from the first transports of despotism, always revives there with all the richness of a plant sown in its natural soil; and morality, concealed under its veil, inculcates nothing but a contempt of grandeur, the happiness of private life, and above all that of repose; for the apostle of repose is always sure of being listened to in the east: as a proof of this, the name even of a place for walking is unknown there; but, on the other hand, one finds abundance of delightful resting places. These are small terraces of mason work, erected in some happy situation, under the shade of a spreading plane-tree, with a fountain in the neighbourhood, a fine place to make coffee, and a *micrab* for repeating one's prayers. An inscription tells, that they

they have been constructed at the expence of some pious Mussulman, who was desirous that his name might in future be blessed by those who might go thither to repose. It is also there, that the inhabitant of Constantinople places his sofa and his carpet, and where, enjoying in silence the surrounding beauties of nature, he passes whole days, lost in profound reveries, the charms of which, unknown to active minds, is familiar to those only who are fond of contemplation.

C H A P. LXXXIX.

THE SAME AUTHOR'S ACCOUNT OF THE CITY
OF CAIRO IN EGYPT, AND THE CEREMONY
OBSERVED ON THE DEPARTURE OF THE
CARAVAN FOR MECCA.

ON my entrance into Cairo, it did not exhibit a very agreeable prospect. For three months this immense city has been desolated by famine. That dreadful scourge, which I am scarcely acquainted with from the descriptions of historians, I have seen here in all its horrors. It was occasioned principally by the avarice of the Beys, who

who caused the corn to be exported at the very time when it was scarcest. This base conduct made it rise to ten times its ordinary value. When the people knew this, they assembled in the Mosques, cursed their masters, and implored heaven to send the pestilence among them to finish all their misfortunes at once; but their violence proceeded no farther. At present the streets are strewn with old men, women, and naked children, weak through want, and most dreadfully disfigured and emaciated. It is of no use to give any thing in charity, for it never fails to occasion quarrels, and the strongest soon snatch it from those who have most need of it, and who are prevented by weakness from defending themselves. Notwithstanding all this, the rich fare well; but every one is not allowed to enjoy good cheer in the like circumstances.

My windows open into the Kalisch, which is the most frequented street in Cairo at the present season; it is above all crowded with moving shews of all kinds, for which this city is celebrated. I have already remarked people who carry about a kind of baboon with a long tail, which they make dance, and which I believe was not known to Mr. Buffon; others beat one another with large snakes more than ten feet in length,

length, and others jump through very small hoops, stuck round with poignards ; but the shew most in reputation at Cairo, is that of the *Raghouaz*, or female dancers, who for the most part are very pretty, which is not usually the case with the Egyptian women. Their faces are uncovered, their hair floats over their shoulders, they are naked to the girdle, and their dances approach nearer to truth than those of the Turks. Close to these priestesses of pleasure, a woman shewed me her child which had just expired for want of nourishment ; others almost starved, who had not strength sufficient to stand upright, supported themselves against the walls, in order to get under my windows, and some fell down before they reached them. I threw some money into the street, but this generosity produced a bad effect ; for all the beggars in that quarter besieged the house with the most frightful and lamentable cries.

The street of which I speak will be converted to-morrow into a canal, and filled with the waters of the Nile, which will be conveyed into it with great pomp. The design of this ceremony is to inform the people that the Nile has risen to its usual height. I am told it is very curious ; if

that is the case, I shall not fail to give you an account when I have seen it.

The festival was very brilliant, the streets, the windows, and the roofs of the houses were filled with people. The water having been slow in coming, they testified some uneasiness, but its abundance soon made every one quiet; and those unhappy wretches, whom I before mentioned, sent forth cries of joy, without reflecting, that the half of them would perish with hunger, before they could see that harvest from which they hoped to derive so much relief. Nothing can equal the superstitious respect which the inhabitants of Egypt entertain for the river that nourishes them. Some took a pleasure in crossing the muddy water in all directions, and mothers plunged their children into it, who came out as black as toads. In short, the crowd did not disperse until the water became so high, that it obliged them to retire. Since that time, the Kalisch has been covered with elegant barks, the rowers of which accompany their labour with a song rather monotonous, but harmonious, and which has nothing of these discordant and shrill cries of the Turkish music. The Pacha and principal Beys assist at the opening of the Kalisch, and certify by a writing, that the water has entered

tered it; without this the Grand Signior could not demand any tribute from Egypt. But all this is only ceremony; for the Beys, nevertheless, keep all the revenues of the country to themselves, and send very little to Constantinople.

I must not omit to give you an account of another ceremony. The caravan for Mecca has departed this morning, accompanied by the Ogiaks and Beys of all the bodies of militia, and of all the sects tolerated in Cairo. The order of this march was regulated by Selim II. after the conquest of Egypt, and the dresses of that age are still preserved. These are coats of mail covered with skins of tygers, veils which cover the head and the face, and float about at the pleasure of a breeze; bucklers and quivers enriched with precious stones, gilt arrows, and a kind of lances used by the ancient Arabians. Amongst the most remarkable sects was that of the *Mahvis*, known formerly under the name of the *Ophiophagi*, or eaters of serpents. In each of their hands they held a bunch of these animals, which they devoured with grimaces calculated to attract the attention and excite the respect of the people; but the principal object of public devotion was the camel loaded with the *mahmal*, a kind of pavilion richly embroidered, in which, it is believed,

that the prayers of all good Mussulmen are conveyed to Mecca. This camel was immediately followed by the standard of Mahomet, which majestically closed the rear. As for me and my companions, our greatest pleasure was to have seen this spectacle ; for, notwithstanding the care we took to conceal ourselves behind a kind of wooden walls, our turbans, made in the fashion of those of the Druzes, and our foreign air, had attracted the notice of some young Mamalucks, who, from the roof of a neighbouring house, threw green oranges and stones at us, with an awkwardness which did honour to their address in that exercise. The *Zerchlis* also amused themselves in shooting a few arrows towards our windows ; but none of them reached us, and we returned safe to our lodgings.

CH A P. XC.

CAPTAIN DIXON'S ACCOUNT OF THE SANDWICH ISLANDS:

THE very extensive and lucrative trade for furs, discovered by Captain Cook, was known to many persons in 1780. But, notwithstanding

ing the spirit of enterprize which prevails in this country, near five years elapsed before any voyage was undertaken, in order to profit by it. In the year 1785, however, a set of gentlemen procured a licence from the South-Sea Company, who possess the exclusive privilege of trading to the Northern Pacific Ocean, and fitted out the King George and Queen Charlotte; the former of which was commanded by Captain Portlock, and the latter by Captain Dixon. Their design was to trade for furs on the American coast, carry them for sale to China, and the two vessels were then to be freighted home on account of the India Company.

The ships having touched at Guernsey, proceeded to Maderia, St. Jago, and Falkland's Islands. In the passage between the two latter places, he tells us, that, on the twenty-fourth of December, one of their goats literally died of a cold, although they had taken every precaution to preserve her. They were then only in between forty-six and forty-seven degrees south latitude, and in the summer of those parts. This may serve to give us an idea of the severity of the climates in the Southern latitudes. On the fourth of January they arrived at Falkland's Island. Sailing from thence they doubled Cape Horn
without

without any accident, and stood to the northward. In this run they caught many turtles. When they had reached the twentieth degree of south latitude, their people began to fall ill of the scurvy.

On the twenty-fourth of May they made Owhyhee, one of the Sandwich Islands, where Captain Cook unfortunately lost his life, and anchored in Karakakooa Bay. A very great number of canoes surrounded them, and exchanged hogs, potatoes, plantains, bread-fruit, &c. for fish-hooks, nails, and other articles of trifling value.

The hopes our navigators had entertained of enjoying themselves here after the fatigues of the voyage, and of procuring a supply of water, were soon lost; for, on the twenty-seventh, they were informed, that the watering-place was *tabooed*. This ceremony is performed by the priests, and is done by sticking a number of small wands, tipped with a tuft of white hair, round any place they want to be kept private, after which no person presumes to approach that place under the punishment of death.

Our navigators were at first apprehensive that this might proceed from a remembrance of the losses they had sustained after Captain Cook's death;

death; but the reason given was, the absence of their chiefs, who were engaged in a war in a neighbouring island. Being thus frustrated, they determined to procure what provisions they could, and sailed to Whahoo, another of the Sandwich Islands. Here they were obliged to put in practice a singular method of watering their ship.

The water they found here was good, but the access to it was difficult, occasioned by a reef of rocks, which runs almost the length of the bay, at a considerable distance from the shore, and so high that it was by no means safe for a loaded boat to venture over. They began to despair of filling their water here. But Captain Dixon, observing that the people in the canoes had gourds and calabashes full of water, purchased them for nails, buttons, &c. and the whole island was seen employed in bringing water to the ship. Thus they were supplied at a very easy expence, saved their boats, casks, &c. from damage, and their men from the danger of catching cold.

Their sick being somewhat recovered here, they sailed for Atoui to procure vegetables; but stopped at Oneehow, where they landed their sick, and got what other refreshment they wanted.

CHAP. XCI.

OF COOK'S RIVER, AND THE INHABITANTS OF
THE ADJACENT COUNTRY.

THEY then again stood to the northward. On the eleventh of July, 1786, there was a total eclipse of the moon, but the weather was foggy, and they could make no observations on it. On the nineteenth they made Cook's River, and were much surprized at hearing the report of a gun, which they soon found to proceed from some Russians, who came on board the King George. They were disappointed in their expectation of trade here, but found a good supply of wood and water, the Russians they saw here came in a sloop from Oonalashka, and had brought some Codiak Indians with them to facilitate their traffic. They appeared to the English to have dissentions among themselves. Here they found a vein of coal.

The ships sailed some days up Cook's River, and procured some skins in barter. The place they traded at was, by observation, in sixty degrees forty-eight minutes north latitude, and a
2 hundred

hundred and fifty-two degrees eleven minutes west longitude. The Indians not only brought furs but fresh salmon in vast plenty.

They sailed down the river again on the tenth of August. Our author describes the country here as dreary and uncomfortable, the adjacent mountains being covered with eternal snows; their tops, which far out-reach the clouds, beggar all description. He describes the inhabitants as not having any fixed residence, but scattered here and there, and supposes they are divided into small tribes, or clans, as in every canoe they saw one appeared superior to the rest. They seemed harmless and inoffensive, use bows, arrows, and spears, both in hunting and fighting. Their dress is composed of the skins of the marmot, neatly sewed together. They have here sea otters, wolves, foxes, rackoons, marmot or field mice, musquash, ermine, &c.

They are of a middle size, and well proportioned. Their features are regular, but their faces are so bedaubed with dirt, that it is impossible to judge of their complexion. Their noses and ears are ornamented with beads, or teeth, if they cannot procure any thing else; as is also a long slit which they make in their upper lip parallel with their mouths. These ornaments are valuable in proportion

proportion to the wealth of the wearer. They saw only one woman; they behaved to her with great respect; her face, contrary to the custom of the men, was tolerably clean, her features and complexion tolerably agreeable.

Sailing from Cook's River, they steered for Prince William's Sound, but met with contrary winds and bad weather. They then steered for Cross Sound, but were here again disappointed; and our author concludes Captain Cook had been deceived by the appearance of the coasts. After having in vain endeavoured to make a port, being long tost about by contrary winds, and being often in danger, Captain Portlock determined to quit this inhospitable coast, and steer back for Sandwich Islands, which he did on the twenty-eighth of September.

In their passage back, on the first of November, being in latitude twenty-seven degrees fifty minutes North, longitude one hundred and forty-nine degrees West, they kept a good look out for Cape St. Maria le Gorta, but sailed directly over the spot without seeing any such place. On the sixteenth of November they had sight of the high land of Owhyhee. Soon after they came to, and were visited by the natives, who brought provisions. Not finding a harbour in this island to their mind,
they

they stood for some other. They found the trade winds among these islands to vary very much, occasioned by the eddy winds blowing round the islands. They continued near a fortnight among these islands before they reached Whahoo. Here they were supplied with provisions very scantily, and soon found that hogs and vegetables were tabooed. But the chief coming on board, and receiving some presents, the taboo was taken off. They soon found this chief well understood his own interest. The natives attempted to steal the ship's boat soon after their arrival, but, being perceived, were driven away, by firing two musquets over their heads.

Among the visitors on board the ships was an old priest, who always brought two attendants with him to prepare his *ava*. This *ava* is a root somewhat resembling our liquorice, but of a different taste; none but the arces or chiefs are permitted to use it, and never prepare it themselves, but keep servants for that purpose: he first begins by chewing, and when he has thus chewed a sufficient quantity, he puts it into a wooden bowl and a small quantity of water, which liquor is afterwards strained, and is of a very intoxicating quality. A singular method of administering to the luxury of the great!

C H A P. XCII.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

ON the fourteenth of December they perceived the natives busily employed on a hill ; they were erecting a house. The same afternoon all the canoes left the ship, and not one returned in the evening ; a circumstance which never happened before, as many women slept on board every night. They suspected from this, that the place was *tabooed* ; and their conjecture proved right : not a single canoe appeared ; but the summit of the hill round the edifice was crowded with people the whole day, and at night a number of fires were lighted. About ten the next morning an old man came on board, bringing a pig as a present, and soon after the priest, who brought also a few trifles ; he frequently made use of terms of reproach against Teereteere, the King ; by which they conjectured he had done something contrary to the established rules of the country. About noon the King came, and informed them there had been a solemn festival on the top of the mountain, and a human sacrifice offered. The women
still,

still, however, continued tabooed; but a supply of hogs and vegetables were brought. At last they learned that the women of the island were prohibited from eating pork; and that a woman, being detected in transgressing that law, had actually been offered as a sacrifice, to appease the wrath of their gods. They also learned, that the King had built the house on the hill, and had convened a general assembly of the people there, directing them to deposit what they had received from the English therein; one half of which he found means to appropriate to his own use. This was the cause of the reproaches uttered by the priest. These events shew, that human sacrifices are actually offered by these people, and that their King's power is absolute.

Finding the anchorage here bad, they sailed, having one of the young natives, the King's nephew, with them, and anchored at Atoui; here they found excellent water, and plants of cocoa-nuts, five of which they could purchase for an eighteen-penny nail. Here they procured some beautiful birds, of the species of the humming-bird. Captain Dixon went out on a shooting party, and found the inhabitants very industriously employed in manufacturing cloth, lines, &c.

From

From hence they proceeded for Oneehow. In their passage the two ships parted, but met again in a few days. The King George, mean time, had been in the most imminent danger on a lee shore. They then returned to Atqui. While here, they were frequently visited by a brother of the King, who always came in a large double canoe, attended by many of the chiefs: he seldom traded for any thing, and commonly brought his daughter, a fine girl of seven years old, with him; he treated her with a fondness truly paternal, carrying her, for the most part, in his arms. On her expressing a desire to come on board, she was handed with the greatest care over the ship's side, and never suffered to stand on deck, but kept constantly in the arms of her father, or of some of the principal attendants. This attention seems only to be paid to the children of the erees, or nobles.

The taboo was here laid on; and our voyagers began to think it was designed by the King to exact some acknowledgment or tribute from the people. The young native of Whahoo began to be tired of his voyage, and determined to stay here. The King of this island was very inquisitive respecting the vessel, and manner of working her, and asked many questions remarkably pertinent,

tinent, and which shewed him to be a man of great abilities. On his visit to the ships some presents were made him, which caused the taboo to be taken off.

While the ships lay here, the writer, with some others, made an excursion to a tappa, or village. On their landing, the inhabitants crowded round them, and one man offered to attend them the whole day for a large nail. The tappa they found situated behind a long row of cocoa-nut trees, as a shelter from the sun. The people, on their arrival, quitted their employment of making cloth, to gaze on the strangers; and their assiduity appearing to the chief rather troublesome, he drove them away with large stones. The natives bore this with patience; which shews the great power their chiefs possess. Our countrymen dined with the chief. Four servants brought in the dinner; one a calabash of water, a second a parcel of cocoa-nuts, a third a bowl of baked *taro*, and a fourth a hog. They were well attended during the meal, which was conducted with great decency and cleanliness. After dinner, our writer engaged a man with a canoe to make an excursion by water, which he agreed to do for two nails. Passing by a high wood pile of a quadrangular form, he wished to
land

land near it ; but was told by the Indian it was a morai, or burying-place, and that he durst not go near it. He found a number of scattered houses, as he returned by land ; and the inhabitants were constantly pressing him and his companions to stop and repose themselves. It is evident this was not done out of a wild curiosity, but from a kind and good-natured hospitality. The natives would bring cocoa-nuts for those who seemed fatigued, and did them every kind office. Our author observes, that the ground was laid out with a skill that would do honour to a British husbandman. The weather then growing tempestuous, the ships put to sea, and came to anchor again. This gave the King some distrust that they designed to settle here, and the people were again tabooed ; and finding themselves disappointed in the supply of hogs they expected, they pursued their voyage to the northward.

On the twenty-ninth of April, 1789, they made land in latitude fifty-nine degrees nine minutes north, longitude one hundred and forty-seven degrees fifty-five minutes west, and anchored at Mountague Island. Here they saw some canoes, who came on board ; and the Indians surprized the English very much, on their seeing the ships dogs, and distinctly calling out

Towzer,

Towzer, Towzer, here, here, and whistling as they do to dogs in England. These canoes were covered with skins, three to carry two men each, and the others one only. Their ears were ornamented with blue beads, which it was supposed they had from the Russians. The Indians went away, promising to return soon with *notooncschuck* (the name they give to otter skins) in plenty. However, the Indians not returning, they sailed from this place to another bay, and there began to scrub and clean their ships, and repair them. Captain Dixon made a small voyage from hence in the ship's whale-boat, in which he gained information of a ship being at no great distance. Captain Dixon profited by this intelligence, and found her to be a snow under English colours, from Bengal, called the Nootka, and commanded by a Captain Mears. Captain Mears had left Bengal in March 1786, and touched at Oonalashka, and discovered a streight which passed into Cook's River; thence he sailed to Prince William's sound, and had wintered in a creek, where Captain Dixon found him; and by the scurvy had lost great part of his people. Captain Mears informed them, that the fur trade had been carried on some years from the East Indies to this place. They had procured a considerable quan-

tity of valuable furs. Captain Portlock spared them two people to assist in navigating their ship. This circumstance shewed how the Indians had learned the English manner of calling dogs.

As the last season of the ships remaining on the coast advanced very fast, they agreed to separate. The King George was to remain in Prince William's Sound, her long boat go to Cook's River; and the Queen Charlotte was to sail to King George's Sound. Before they parted, two large canoes and several small ones joined them; and, to encourage the Indians to trade, they were admitted on board the King George, where they shewed an astonishing ingenuity in thieving; if by chance they were detected, they were with difficulty prevailed upon to restore their plunder.

Captain Dixon having failed, got into Port Mulgrave Sound; there is good reason to suppose this was the first English ship that entered it. They continued putting into other places on this coast, all which appeared very thinly inhabited.

In one of the harbours the Queen Charlotte put into, some canoes came on board, in which were some women well advanced in years. One of them had a lip piece remarkably large, and curiously ornamented. Captain Dixon had a strong inclination to purchase it, and offered several articles

articles for it, which she rejected with contempt. At last one of the men happening to shew the old lady some buttons, which looked very bright, she immediately embraced the offer, and parted with her ornament, which is now in the possession of Sir Joseph Banks. Continuing thus trading until the eighth of August, when they saw two ships, which proved to be the Prince of Wales, Captain Collingwood, and the Princess Royal, Captain Duncan, both from London, and fitted out by the same owners. By them they had the pleasure of hearing their friends were well. These ships left England in September, 1786, had left a factory at Staten Island, and been near a month trading in King George's Sound with little success.

Having now completed their traffic, and run along a considerable part of the coast which Captain Cook had not seen, they returned to the southward, and on the fifth of September arrived again at Owhyhee, from whence they sailed across the great Pacific ocean to China, wher they disposed of their furs, loaded with tea, and returned to England, after an absence of three years.

C H A P. XCIII.

CAPTAIN DIXON'S DESCRIPTION OF THE INHABITANTS OF THE NORTH-WEST COAST OF AMERICA, A. D. 1787.

CAPTAIN COOK, in his last voyage, fell in with the American coast, in forty-four degrees north latitude; but did not anchor until he came to Nootka, which he named King George's Sound, situated in forty-nine degrees thirty-six minutes;—and after leaving this harbour, he did not see land until latitude fifty-six degrees twenty minutes. The intermediate places on the coast, by consequence, remained unexplored. Some of these places Captain Dixon visited, and made the following observations on the people of that country.

In a sound situated in latitude fifty-two degrees thirty-three minutes, to which they gave the name of Port Mulgrave, they found about seventy inhabitants, who, like most of the people on the coast, were so remarkably fond of painting their faces with a variety of colours, that it was not easy to distinguish their real complexions.

plexions. However, our countrymen prevailed on one woman, by persuasion, and a trifling present, to wash her face and hands, and the alteration it made in her appearance surprized them. The healthy red which flushed her cheek, was beautifully contrasted with the whiteness of her neck. Her eyes were black and sparkling, her eye-brows of the same colour, and finely arched; her forehead so remarkably clear, that the veins might be seen even in their minutest branches. But this symmetry of features was entirely destroyed by a custom extremely singular.

An aperture is made in the thick part of the under lip, and increased by degrees in a line parallel to the mouth, and equally long. In this aperture a piece of wood is constantly worn, of an elliptical form, half an inch thick. The superficies is hollowed on each side like a spoon, though not quite so deep. The edges are likewise hollowed like a pulley, in order to fix this curious ornament more fairly in the lip, which greatly distorts every feature in the lower part of the face. This piece of wood is here worn only by the women, and not even by them indiscriminately, but by such only as appeared of a superior station to the rest.

Their language is barbarous, uncouth, and difficult to pronounce; and the people appeared very close and uncommunicative in their dispositions. Their habitations were the most wretched hovels that can be conceived, consisting of a few poles stuck in the ground, without order or regularity, inclosed and covered with loose boards. These constitute an Indian hut; and so little care is taken in their construction, that they are insufficient to keep out rain or snow, the crannies serving to let out the smoke, no particular aperture being left for that purpose.

The inside of these dwellings exhibits a complete picture of dirt, indolence, and laziness. The fragments of their meals, and heaps of fish, stinking flesh, grease, oil, &c. are carelessly thrown about them. Yet these people appear satisfied with their station.

The chief reason why the Indians take no greater pains in the structure of their habitations seems to be, that they remain in one spot no longer than the fish and game are plenty. We shall, however, find they are capable of greater efforts in arts, as their small canoes are neatly finished; but their large ones are the reverse, being made of one large tree, rudely excavated, and reduced to no particular shape, except that
the

the ends have the resemblance of a butcher's tray; and generally large enough to hold twelve or fourteen people.

The Indians supplied our people with plenty of hallibut, which they caught with a hook made of a simple piece of wood, the shank at least half an inch in diameter; that part which turns up, and which forms an acute angle, is considerably smaller, and brought gradually to a point: a flat piece of wood, about six inches long, and two wide, is neatly lashed to the shank, on the back of which is rudely carved the representation of a human face. Our author thinks this ornament has some religious allusion, and is possibly intended as a kind of deity to insure success in fishing. They bait their hook with a kind of fish, called by the sailors squids, and fix a bladder at the end of the line as a buoy; their lines are strong, made of the sinews or intestines of animals. The fisherman, on hawling up a fish, knocks him on the head with a great club; this is done to prevent the hallibut, which is sometimes very large, from upsetting the canoe in his struggles.

They dress their victuals by putting heated stones into a kind of wicker baskets, among their fish, flesh, &c. and covering it up very close. These Indians are particularly fond of chewing a

plant which appears to be a species of tobacco ; but not content with it in its simple state, they generally mix lime along with it, and sometimes the inner rind of the pine-tree, together with a resinous substance extracted from it.

When our voyagers came into the harbour, their attention was much engaged by the sight of a number of white poles, on a level piece of ground, at the distance of about a mile and a half ; they appeared to be constructed with such regularity and order, as to be beyond the reach of Indian contrivance. Captain Dixon took an opportunity to satisfy his curiosity, and found it to be a repository for the dead. The manner in which they dispose of their deceased friends is very remarkable : they separate the head from the body ; the former they put into a square box, and the body into a kind of oblong chest. At each end of the chest, a pole about ten feet long is driven into the earth in a slanting posture, so that the upper ends meet together, and are firmly lashed with a kind of rope prepared for that purpose.

About two feet from the top of this arch, a small piece of timber goes across, and is very neatly fitted to each pole ; on this piece of timber, the box which contains the head is fixed, and strongly secured by a rope. The box is frequently

quently decorated with small shells, and sometimes teeth, which are let into the wood with great neatness and ingenuity, and is painted with a variety of colours; the poles are uniformly painted white; sometimes the poles are fixed upright on each side of the body, but the head is always secured in the above position. What ceremonies are used at the interment of the dead, our people could not learn. One of the boxes, with a head in it, beautifully ornamented, they afterwards found in a cave on this coast.

In another port, which Captain Dixon called Norfolk Sound, in latitude fifty-seven degrees three minutes, they found about one hundred and seventy-five inhabitants, very much resembling the people at Port Mulgrave. Their features are distorted by the lip-piece, in the same manner; this operation seems to be performed at a particular period of life, that is about fourteen or fifteen years old; at first the center of the upper lip is simply perforated, and a piece of copper introduced to keep it from closing; this aperture is afterwards lengthened from time to time, in a line parallel with the mouth, and the wooden ornaments are enlarged in proportion; by this means it becomes very large in those advanced in years.

Their traffic with the English here was carried on with great order and regularity; they constantly came along-side at day-light in the morning, and never failed to spend half an hour in singing, before the traffic commenced. The chief has always the management of the trade, and if a second parcel came along-side, they always patiently waited until he had done: if they formed a good opinion of his bargains, they would sometimes employ him; but at other times they used every precaution to prevent their neighbours observing what they had obtained in exchange for their commodities.

About noon they constantly left the ships, and went on shore about an hour, which time was taken up in eating; and they frequently left the ship about four in the afternoon. When the traffic of the day was over, they began to sing, which they seldom left off till the approach of night. One peculiar custom was, that when the chief had concluded a bargain, he repeated the word *Coo-coo* thrice, with quickness, and was answered by all the people in the canoe with the word *whoah*.

One of the chiefs who came to trade, happening to cast his eyes on a piece of Sandwich cloth, became very importunate to have it; and his wish
being

being completed, he went on shore without singing his usual parting song. Soon after day-light, next morning, he appeared along-side, dressed in a coat made of this cloth, cut exactly after their form, which resembled a waggoner's frock, except in the collar and wrists; the coat fitted very well, and the seams were sewed with a degree of neatness equal to an English mantua-maker.

Our author one day endeavoured to get at some words in their language, from one of the chiefs; and on pointing to the sun, the Indian took great pains to make him understand, that their origin was the same as his: that they also came from above, and that the sun animated all things.

The canoes here are constructed much in the same manner as those at Port Mulgrave; but the large ones were more completely finished, and would hold from fifteen to twenty persons.

An island, which they called Heppah Island, our people found well defended by nature from any assault of an enemy, having a steep beach, very difficult of access, on one side, and the other sides barricadoed with pines and bushes. The inhabitants had been at infinite pains to raise additional fences; a proof they had wars with each other.

The number of inhabitants they saw, on this coast, our author guesses at about 10,000, and from appearances more, as the women are prolific, and the people free from the diseases which luxury and intemperance bring on. But, on the other hand, the wars which they constantly wage with each other, and the number which must perish by sea, from the bad construction of their vessels, must considerably diminish their number.

They are in general of the middle size, straight limbs, and well shaped. Our author says, he never saw a corpulent person among them. Both sexes have high cheek bones and small eyes; a want of cleanliness prevails all over the coast, which prevented him from determining on their complexion; but he says, he does not think them much darker than the Europeans in general. Their hair is long and black, but has constantly a large quantity of grease and red ochre rubbed in it; some few of the women tie it behind in a club. The young men pluck out their beards, but the old men suffer them to grow.

The dress all along the coast is much the same; a coat for the men, made of skin, and sometimes a loose cloak, thrown over the shoulders. The more civilized wear a piece of skin round their waists. The under garment of the women is made

made of tanned leather, and covers the body to the ankle, being tied in different parts of the body to make it sit close; the upper garment is also generally of tanned leather, and reaches no lower than the waist. The women do not wear furs.

The children are wrapped in furs, and put into a kind of chair made of bark, where they are lashed so close that they cannot alter their posture: the chair is so contrived, that when the mother wants to feed the child, there is no occasion to release it from its shackles.

The ornaments among these people are different, in different tribes. They seem very fond of beads in some places, which must have been introduced among them by the Russians. They have at least three different languages on this coast, all their words abounding in consonants.

Besides the ornaments before mentioned, they are very fond of masks, and scissars, and various kinds of caps painted in devices, such as birds, beasts, &c.; they have likewise many devices carved in wood, some of them far from being ill executed. These curiosities seem to be greatly valued, and are kept in boxes.

When any party came to trade, these treasures were first produced, and the principal persons
dressed

dressed out in all their finery before the singing commenced. The chief always put on a large coat of tanned elk-skin, with some rows of dried berries or beaks of birds round the bottom, which made a rattling noise whenever he moved. In his hand he had a kind of rattle, formed of three bent sticks, to which birds' beaks were fastened. They shook this to accompany their singing. Their songs consisted of several stanzas, to each of which they added a chorus.

Their time they calculate by moons.

CHAP. XCIV.

A SHORT ACCOUNT OF CAPTAIN PORTLOCK'S
AND CAPTAIN DIXON'S VOYAGE, TO THE
NORTH-WEST COAST OF AMERICA, IN THE
KING GEORGE AND QUEEN CHARLOTTE,
A. D. 1785, 1786, 1787, 1788.

IN the month of May, 1785, Richard Cadman Etches, and other traders, entered into a commercial partnership, under the title of *The King George's Sound Company*, for the purpose of carrying on a fur trade from the western coast of
America

America to China. With this view, they obtained a licence from the South-Sea Company, and another from the East-India Company; the latter of whom engaged at the same time to give them a freight of teas from Canton.

The company having purchased a ship of 320, and a snow of 200 tons burthen, as being best fitted for such a voyage, they appointed Captain Portlock commander of the former, as well as of the expedition, and Captain Dixon of the smaller.

As both these gentlemen had accompanied Captain Cook in his last voyage into the Pacific Ocean, they were deemed well qualified to carry into execution a plan, which required great nautical knowledge and great experience. Inferior officers of competent talents were at the same time appointed; and that the voyage might embrace other objects besides the profits of traffic, or the advantages of discovery, several gentlemen's sons, who had shewn an inclination for a sea-faring life, were put under Captain Portlock's care, to be initiated in the knowledge of marine affairs. He at the same time engaged William Philpot Evans and Joseph Woodcock, two of the pupils of Mr. Wales, master of the mathematical school in Christ's Hospital, to assist in teaching the boys
the

the rudiments of navigation, and to make drawings of remarkable lands, and of other objects.

Captain Portlock sailed from Deptford in the month of August, 1785, and after touching at Guernsey, St. Jago, and Falkland's Islands, doubled Cape-Horn, and arrived at Karakakooa-Bay, in Owhyhee, one of the Sandwich isles, on the twenty-sixth of February, 1786.

Soon after the ships had come to anchor, they were surrounded by an amazing number of the natives, both in canoes and in the water, who became so exceedingly troublesome, crawling up the cable and the ship's sides, that most of the seamen were employed in keeping the vessel clear, and it was not without some difficulty that they could get moored. By day light, next morning, they were visited by a vast number of the natives, but no chief was to be seen among them who had sufficient power to keep them in order. They, therefore, became so daring and insolent, that Captain Portlock was under the necessity of placing centinels, with cutlasses, to prevent them from boarding the vessels. This unexpected reception convinced him, that nothing could with safety be done on shore, without the protection of a strong guard; and taking such a step might, perhaps, have irritated the natives. On this account

count he left Karakakooa Bay as soon as possible, and proceeded to Woahoo, another of the Sandwich isles, which Captain Portlock considers as the most important of the whole.

CHAP. XCV.

CAPTAIN PORTLOCK'S REMARKS.

BEFORE I quit Woahoo, let me observe, that I think it the finest island in the group, and most capable of being turned to advantage, were it settled by Europeans, than any of the rest, there being scarcely a spot which does not appear fertile. Here we found a great number of warriors and warlike instruments. Many of the warriors were tattooed in a manner totally different from any I ever took notice of amongst the Sandwich islands. Their faces were tattooed so as to appear quite black, besides great part of the body being tattooed in a variety of forms.

The greatest part of the daggers left by us at these islands, during our last voyage, at present seem to centre here; for we scarcely ever saw a large canoe that the people in her had not one a-piece, and at Owhyhee I do not remember seeing more than two or three.

As

As they are very dangerous and destructive weapons, I did not suffer any to be made in either ship, though strongly importuned by many of the natives. Indeed I always thought it, during the last voyage, a very imprudent action to furnish Indians with weapons which, at one time or other, might be turned against ourselves. And my suspicions were but too well founded; for, with one of the daggers given by us to the natives of Owhyhee, my much-lamented commander, Captain Cook, was killed; and but for them, that ornament of the British nation might have lived to have enjoyed the fruits of his labour in ease and affluence, after a series of years spent in the service of his country, and for the benefit of mankind in general. He, however, unfortunately set the example, by ordering some daggers to be made after the model of the Indian pahooas. This practice was afterwards followed by every person who could raise iron enough to make one; so that, during our stay at these islands, the armourer was employed to little other purpose than in working these destructive weapons. And so liberally were they disposed of, that the morning we were running into Karakakooa Bay, after the Resolution had sprung her foremast, I saw Maiha Maiha get eight or nine daggers from
 Captain

Captain Clarke, in exchange for a feathered cloak. Since our arrival at Woahoo, however, I have purchased some cloaks, considerably better than that of Captain Clarke's, for a small piece of iron worked into the form of a carpenter's plane-bit. These the Sandwich islanders make use of as adzes, and call them *towees*; and to them they answer every purpose wherever an edge tool is required.

CHAP. XCVI.

ON THE COMMERCIAL ADVANTAGES WHICH
MAY BE DERIVED FROM THE PART OF AME-
RICA VISITED BY CAPTAIN PORTLOCK.

AFTER procuring water and some refreshments at this island, our navigators visited Oneehow, another of the same group. They then proceeded to the coast of America, and arrived at Coal Harbour, in Cook's River, where they found a party of Russians. But, as they had no person on board who understood the Russian language, they procured very little information from them. As far as they could understand, they

they had come last from Kodiak, an island near the Schumagins, on a trading expedition. They had left their vessel at Kodiak, and proceeded to Cook's river in boats. This party consisted of twenty-five men. They had also a number of Indians among them, who had skin canoes, and who seemed to be on the most friendly terms with the Russians.

The Russian chief brought Captain Portlock, as a present, a quantity of fine salmon, sufficient to serve both ships for one day; in return for which the Captain gave him some yams, and directed him how to dress them. He likewise gave him some beef, pork, and a few bottles of brandy.

On quitting Coal Harbour, Captain Portlock proceeded up Cook's River. But, being disappointed in his expectation of meeting with furs in abundance, he determined to quit it on the first opportunity, and to make his way to Prince William's Sound, where he hoped to have more success.

Speaking of the commercial advantages, which might be derived from this part of America, Captain Portlock says, "Besides the various sorts of furs met with here, Cook's River produces native sulphur, ginseng, snake-root, black lead, coal,

coal, together with the greatest abundance of fine salmon; and the natives behave quietly, and barter fairly, so that a most profitable trade might doubtless be carried on here, by any persons of sufficient enterprise to undertake it.

Being prevented by contrary winds from reaching Prince William's Sound, our navigators proceeded along the coast, with intention of making King George's Sound; but the weather turning out bad, and appearing to be set in for a continuance, and as their sails and rigging were much damaged, and the crews stood greatly in need of refreshment, Captain Portlock came to a determination of leaving the coast, and of standing directly for Sandwich Islands, where he came to anchor, in King George's Bay, in Waohoo, on the thirtieth of November, 1786. Having remained at Sandwich Isles till the third of March, 1787, our navigators directed their course to the coast a second time, and visited Montague Island, soon after which the ships separated, and the King George proceeded to Hinchinbrooke Cove, at the entrance of Prince William's Sound.

CHAP. XCVII.

CAPTAIN PORTLOCK'S DESCRIPTION OF THE
NATIVES OF HINCHINBROOKE COVE.

THESE people are for the most part short in stature, and square-made men ; their faces, men and women, are in general flat and round, with high cheek-bones, and flattish noses ; their teeth are very good and white ; eyes dark ; quick of sight ; their smell very good, and they quicken it by smelling at the snake-root parched. As to their complexions, they are generally lighter than the Southern Indians, and some of their women I have seen with rosy cheeks. Their hair is black and strait, and they are fond of having it long ; but on the death of a friend they cut it short, to denote them to be in mourning ; nor have I ever observed that they have any other way to mark their sorrow and concern for their relations. The men have generally bad, ill-shaped legs, which I attributed to their sitting in one constant position in their canoes. They seem possessed of as great a share of pride and vanity as Europeans, for they often paint the face and hands ; their ears and noses are bored,

bored, and the under lip slit. In the hole in the nose they hang on an ornament (as they deem it) made of bone or ivory, two or three inches long. At the ears they mostly wear beards, hanging down to the shoulders; and in the slit in the lip they have a bone or ivory instrument fitted, with holes in it, from which they hang beads as low as the chin. These holes in the lip disfigure them very much, some of them having it as large as their mouth. Their clothing consists wholly of the skins of animals and birds. I must do them the justice to say, that we in general found them very friendly; and they appear so remarkably tender and affectionate to their women and children, that you cannot please them more than in making them small presents; but carry your attention to their women no farther, for nothing gives them greater displeasure than taking liberties with them. Another very prevalent inclination is that of thieving; which is by no means peculiar to them, but is equally to be seen in all other Indians, not only from strangers, but from one another. I have frequently, in the course of my trading with them, seen them steal from one another, and, on being detected, they will give up the articles they have stolen with a laugh, and immediately appear as unconcerned as if nothing had

had happened amiss. I am sure that with them thieving with dexterity is rather thought a grace than a disgrace ; and the complete thief is a clever fellow, but the bungling pilferer is less admired. You may generally know the man who comes as a professed thief, for his face will be all daubed with paint ; and whilst you may be viewing the curious figure he cuts with his painted face, you may be sure that his hands are not idle, if there is any thing near him worth stealing : and whenever you see the arm slip from out of the sleeve of the frock of skins, which they always wear, you may be well assured that the person is intent on thieving ; and they always conceal the articles they have stolen under their frock, until they have an opportunity of stowing them away in their canoes : but, notwithstanding our knowing the professed thief, and all our vigilance, they frequently stole little things from us, but of no consequence. During our intercourse with them they grew less addicted to thieving, in consequence of my sometimes appearing a little angry with them, and taking some pains to convince them of the impropriety of their behaviour. Upon the whole, they appear a good kind of people ; and I am convinced, in a little time, provided a settlement of sufficient strength were established,

would

would be an industrious set of people, in hunting, and procuring the sea-otter, and other skins, for sale to the settlers.

The articles of food of the inhabitants are fish and animals of all kinds, of which they eat very heartily when they have it in their power. They eat the vegetables which the country affords, and the inner bark of the pine tree ; which, in the spring of the year, must be of infinite service in recovering them from the scurvy, with which disease I am apt to think they are much afflicted during the winter, having seen many of them with swollen legs, and sores, which I am pretty certain proceeded from that disease. As the summer advanced we saw little of those appearances. They never practise the method of smoking their provisions ; and, for want of salt, have no other way of curing their winter stock of fish than drying it in the sun. Their fresh fish they generally roast, by running some sticks through to spread it, and clapping it up before the fire. Their animal food they generally dress in baskets or wooden vessels, by putting to it red-hot stones, until the victuals are dressed enough ; and it is surprizing how quick they dress their provisions in this way.

During the summer season they lead a strange wandering life ; and the shelter they live under

in bad weather, when from home, is either their canoes, or small sheds made of a few sticks covered with a little bark. Their winter habitations are also very ill-made and inconvenient. Those I have seen are not more than from four to six feet high, about ten feet long, and about eight feet broad, built with thick plank, and the crevices filled up with dry moss; and in those houses they generally stow very thick. The method they use in making plank is, to split the trees with wooden or stone wedges; and I have seen a plank twenty or twenty-five feet long split from a tree by their method.

Their weapons for war are spears of sixteen or eighteen feet long, headed with iron; bows and arrows, and long knives; all of which they are amazingly dexterous in using. Their fishing implements are wooden hooks, with lines made of a small kind of rock weed, which grows to a considerable length, and will hold a good strain, if kept clear of hinks, and properly moistened. With these hooks and lines they catch halibut and cod: salmon they catch in wiers, or spear them; and herring, I believe, they catch with small nets. The implements with which they kill the sea-otter, and other amphibious animals, are harpoons made with bone, with two or more barbs; with

with a staff of about six or eight feet long, on which is fastened a skin or large bladder, well blown as a buoy; and darts of about three or four feet long, which they throw with a wooden instrument of about a foot long.

C H A P. XCVIII.

CAPTAIN DIXON'S ACCOUNT OF THE DISPOSAL OF THE FURS AT CHINA.

AT the time our voyage was first set on foot, China was the market fixed on for the disposal of whatever furs we might procure; and at the same time it was judged of no small consequence to procure a freight from thence. An agreement with the East-India Company was accordingly made; our furs were sold to their super-cargoes at a fair price, or left in their hands for them to dispose of at a future opportunity, and they were to have a certain per centage on whatever sum of money they might fetch.

No sooner were the skins landed at our factory, than a particular account of them was taken by a set of merchants belonging to the customs, and

who (I understand) give security to the Emperor for the duty being paid : another account was taken by the people employed by Mr. Browne for that purpose.

Our skins being properly assorted, the quantity fixed on to be disposed of by Mr. Browne was two thousand five hundred and fifty-two sea-otter skins, four hundred and thirty-four cub, and thirty-four fox skins.

The remainder of our cargo, which consisted of one thousand and eighty beaver tails, sundry indifferent beaver skins and cloaks, one hundred and ten beaver seals, about one hundred and fifty land beaver, sixty fine cloaks of the earless marmot; together with sundry racoon, fox, lynx, &c. were left to be disposed of by our captains in the best manner they were able ; probably for no other reason than to furnish them with money for their current expences, and no doubt expecting what they had left would be barely sufficient for that purpose.

In regard to the sale of our furs, I should first observe, that there is at Canton a company of wealthy merchants, called the Hong merchants, with whom our East-India Company transact all their business, and purchase from them the whole of the tea and china-ware sent to Great Britain. To these people our furs were offered, with an expectation of their immediately

mediately taking them off our hands at an advantageous price ; but here we were woefully disappointed, and we found, to our cost, the sad mistake of our owners, in appointing the super-cargoes to have the sole disposal of their property ; for the moment these Hong-merchants had looked the skins over and fixed a value on them, no other merchant durst interfere in the purchase : indeed, as the quantity above-mentioned was not sufficient to be divided, there were not many people except those Hong-merchants who had it in their power to buy so large a parcel, and advance the money immediately : add to this, the duty on merchandize in the port of Canton seems not to be regulated by any fixed rule, but rests in a great measure in the breasts of those appointed by the Hoppo to lay it on, and who fix it higher or lower at pleasure. With these people the Hong-merchants have great influence, so that had any indifferent person been at liberty to purchase our skins, and disposed to give us an advantageous price for them, the fear of having an enormous duty to pay, would at once deter him from any attempt of the kind ; this we found strictly verified more than once.

In this poor situation were we with respect to the sale of our cargo, during the month of December, and the greatest part of January 1788 ;

either we must close with the paltry offers which the Hong-merchants had made to the super-cargoes, or be under the necessity of leaving our furs in their hands undisposed of ; this both parties knew we wished to avoid, if possible. Mean while some of the refuse, which they had left for us to dispose of, sold to considerable advantage ; the one thousand and eighty tails sold for two dollars each ; the fur seals for five dollars each, and a small parcel of rubbish for fifty-five dollars.

On the twenty-sixth our principal furs, viz. two thousand five hundred and fifty-two otter ; four hundred and thirty-four cub, and thirty-four fox, were sold and delivered to the East-India Company's super-cargoes, for fifty thousand dollars.

C H A P. XCIX.

MR. DE BRISSON'S NARRATIVE OF HIS SHIP-
WRECK AND CAPTIVITY, A. D. 1787.

IT may, perhaps, be thought strange that this work should not appear till 1789 ; that is to say, until more than two years after the end of my captivity. Know, kind reader, that as soon as
my

my quarantine was finished at Cadiz, even before I set foot on my native soil, or paid my respects to a tender and affectionate spouse, whom I adore, I wrote to the Marshal de Castries, the Minister of the Marine, that I waited for his orders to return to Senegal, and that, charged with fresh dispatches, I re-embarked at Havre de Grace, on the sixth of May 1787. In this voyage I had the good fortune to arrive, without any accident, at the island of St. Louis, when I received a visit too interesting to be passed over in silence.

CHAP. C.

DOCTOR SPARMAN VISITS OUR AUTHOR.

DOCTOR SPARMAN, a celebrated physician, and professor of natural history, already well known by his travels to the interior parts of Africa, from the Cape of Good Hope, waited upon me one day at Senegal, with his countryman Mr. Wadstrom. These illustrious strangers, after making themselves known, informed me that they had come from Goree, for the purpose of conversing with me, and to beg me to give them

instructions respecting that part of Africa which I had traversed, and to point out the best method of going from Senegal to Morocco, across the deserts, by Galam, Bambon, and Bondon.

In answer to their enquiries I told them, that they would never succeed in that enterprize, unless they could find some Arab, who would undertake to conduct them. I afterwards introduced them to a conference with the Sherif Sidy Mouhammed, who resides at Senegal, but he candidly confessed, that notwithstanding his quality, which would shelter him from many disagreeable circumstances, he could not venture to expose himself to the dangers of the journey which they proposed. After this speech, they were sensible that it would be impossible for them to undertake it with any hopes of success.

On my return to France, I found the place which the Marshal de Castries had resigned, filled by the Count de la Luzerne. It was, therefore, into the hands of this minister that I delivered the dispatches which had been entrusted to my care. The kindness with which he received me, the compassion which he shewed me on account of my misfortunes, and the hopes which he gave me that his Majesty's beneficence would be extended
towards

towards me, as one of his faithful servants, encouraged me to revise and publish this narrative, which I can assure the public has been dictated only by truth, and a regard to the interests of my country, and of humanity.

CHAP. CI.

THE SHIP STRIKES AGAINST A SHOAL, AND IS WRECKED.

HAVING made several voyages to Africa, I received an order in June, 1785, from the Marshal de Castries, then Minister and Secretary of State for the Marine Department, to embark for the island of St. Louis, at Senegal, in the *St. Catharine*, commanded by Mons. Le Turc. On the tenth of July, we passed between the Canary Isles and that of Palma; and soon after, the Captain having rejected my advice as to the caution necessary to be observed in passing those seas, the ship struck against the shoals.

A dreadful noise now ensued. The masts being loosened, quivered over our heads. The sails being violently agitated, were torn into a thousand

rags. The terror became general and the cries of the sailors, mixed with the dreadful roaring of the sea, which seemed as if irritated at seeing its course stopped between the rocks and the vessel, which it was about to swallow up, still added to the horror of the scene. In this dangerous state, the consternation of the crew was so great that no one thought of saving himself. "O! my wife," cried one. "O! my dear children," exclaimed a second; while others lifted their hand to heaven, and implored the Divine protection. However, by means of axes, we cut away the masts, hoping that we should be able to save the ship. But our exertions were of no avail, the hold was already filled with water.

We should have been inevitably lost, had not Mr. Yan, one of the lieutenants, Mr. Suret, a passenger, three English sailors, and a few others, encouraged by my example, assisted me to hoist out the chaloupe, and to prevent it afterwards from being sunk, or dashed to pieces against the sides of the ship. We were obliged to struggle the whole night against the fury of the sea, that, when the day appeared, we might be able to avoid the rocks, which surrounded us on all sides, and to get if possible on shore.

Scarcely had we made two strokes with our oars, when they were swept from the hands of the rowers, by the violence of the waves; the chaloupe was overfet, and we were in an instant separated, and all except Mr. Devoise, brother to the Consul at Tripoli, cast upon a bank of sand. I, however, threw myself immediately into the water, and was fortunate enough to save him from destruction.

Our unfortunate companions, who had remained on board, now saw themselves deprived of every assistance from us; but I soon revived their hopes, by plunging into the waves, accompanied by Mr. Yan, by whose zeal and activity my efforts were seconded. He prevailed upon the rest to join us in endeavouring to get the chaloupe afloat again, which we accomplished with a great deal of difficulty; but we found ourselves amply repaid for our labour, when we set the rest of the crew on shore. We, however, escaped this first danger to become the victims of a second, still more terrible.

When the wretched crew had reached shore, I prevailed on them to climb the surrounding rocks, on the summit of which we discovered an immense plain, the view of which was terminated by the appearance of some little hills, covered with a kind

of wild fern. On these hills, we saw some children collecting a flock of goats : who, as soon as they beheld strangers, set up such cries as instantly alarmed and brought together the neighbouring inhabitants. After they had viewed the crew, they began to dance and caper, and at the same time uttered the most horrid cries and yells.

When we came up to these savages, some of my companions, and among others the first and second lieutenants, separated from us. They were immediately surrounded, and seized by the collar, and it was then that, by the reflection of the sun's rays from the polished blades of their poignards, we discovered, for the first time, that they were armed. Not having perceived this before, I had advanced without any fear.

Our two unhappy companions having disappeared, I was not able to make the men stop, even for a little time. Fear got so much possession of their hearts, that they all together gave vent to cries of despair, and fled different ways. The Arabs, armed with cutlasses and large clubs, fell upon them with incredible ferocity, and I had the mortification of soon seeing some of them wounded, whilst others, stripped and naked, lay stretched out and expiring on the sand.

C H A P. CII.

MR. BRISSON FALLS INTO THE HANDS OF A
TALBE.

I Was fortunate enough to obtain a promise of good-will from an Arab without arms, who afterwards proved to be a Talbe, or Priest, by giving him two beautiful watches, a gold stock-buckle, two pair of silver sleeve buckles, a ring set with diamonds, a silver goblet, and two hundred and twenty livres in specie. The latter article afforded the Arab most pleasure.

The news of our shipwreck being by this time spread abroad throughout the country, we saw the savages running with the greatest eagerness from all quarters: their numbers naturally increased the jealousy of the rest, so that they soon came to blows, and many of them lost their lives in the contest. The women, enraged that they could not pillage the ship, threw themselves upon us, and tore from us the few articles of dress which we had left; but mine principally attracted their attention, as it seemed to be more worthy of notice.

My

My master, who was far from being of a warlike disposition, perceiving that the number of the Arabs increased every moment, called aside two of his friends, whom he cunningly admitted as partners with him in the property of twelve of the crew, who had given themselves up to him. After he had made his arrangements he retired from the crowd, that he might shelter us from insult; and the place which he made choice of for that purpose, was a wretched hut, covered with moss, and situated at the distance of more than a league from the sea, where we were lodged, or rather heaped one upon the other.

The first care of our patron was to pay us a visit, and to search us to see that we had concealed none of our property. My companions, unluckily for them, had reserved nothing, and on that account he was in a very ill humour, and treated them without any mercy. He took from them even their shirts and their handkerchiefs, giving them to understand, that if he did not do them that favour others would. He attempted also to pay me the same compliment, but having observed to him, that I had already given him enough, I met with no farther molestation.

Not knowing as yet among what tribe we had fallen, I addressed myself to our master, with a view

view of being informed; and partly by words, and partly by signs, I held the following conversation with him. "What is thy name, and that of thy tribe, and why didst thou fly from these crowds, who advanced towards the shores of the sea?"—"My name is Sidy Mahammet of Zouze; my tribe is that of Labdesseba, and I fled from the Ouadelims, because we do not live in good terms with one another?" I was much affected to learn that we had fallen into the hands of the most ferocious people who inhabit the deserts of Africa.

While the Talbe went to the shore to obtain more plunder, a company of Ouadelims discovered and pillaged our retreat, and beat us in the most unmerciful manner. I was almost at the last gasp, when one of the Talbe's associates came up and rescued me; but, before a large assembly, afterwards claimed me as the reward of his valour. The priest, at this claim, thundered out the strongest objections, and threatened to chastise the claimant; who replied to the Talbe, "Since this is thy pretension, as he, cannot become mine, he shall perish by my hand." Scarcely had he finished these words, when he drew his poignard to stab me. I trembled under the threatening dagger of this barbarian; but my master, without losing

losing a moment of time, threw a kind of chaplet*, of an incredible length over me, and then took in his hand a small book which hung at his girdle. At the same instant the women rushed towards me, and snatched me from the hands of Nouegem, to put into those of the enraged priest; so much did they dread lest he should thunder forth an anathema against his antagonist.

When I recovered a little tranquillity, and began to reflect upon the danger which I had escaped, my mind was so much affected, that I could not refrain from tears. I endeavoured to conceal from every eye this testimony of my sensibility and grief; but some of the women having observed it, instead of being moved with compassion, they threw sand in my eyes, "to dry my eye-lids," according to their expression. Happily the obscurity of the night, by concealing me from their sight, saved me from the fury of these monsters.

We had been now three days in a state of slavery, and during all this time we had received no nourishment but a little flour, which, though spoilt by the sea water, was rendered much more disagreeable by a mixture of barley meal, which had

* The TALBES carry about with them a long piece of cord, upon which are put one hundred and fifteen small black balls. They use them as the Catholics use their beads.

been long kept in a goat's skin; and bad as this repast was, it was every now and then interrupted by alarming cries which we heard at some distance.

This tribe of Arabs had repaired to the sea coast, a few days before the shipwreck, to collect the seeds of wild plants, for the support of their families in the interior country; and now, on the approach of the Ouadelims, their enemies, they prepared to return home, with their provisions and their prisoners.

CHAP. CIII.

OF THE MANNER OF TRAVELLING IN THE DESARTS.

AFTER passing mountains of a prodigious height, which were covered with small greyish coloured flints, as sharp as those used for fire-arms, we descended into a sandy valley, over-run with sharp thistles. Having here slackened our pace, I found that the soles of my feet were entirely covered with blood, so that it was impossible for me to proceed any farther. My master then made me
get

get up behind him upon his camel, but this attention on his part, instead of giving me any relief, had a quite contrary effect, and exposed me to the severest pain. A camel naturally steps very heavily, and its trot is remarkably hard. As I was naked, I could not secure myself from the friction of the animal's hair, so that in a very little time my skin was entirely rubbed off. My blood trickled down over the animal's sides, and this sight, instead of moving the pity of these barbarians, afforded them a subject of diversion. They sported with my sufferings, and, that their enjoyments might be still higher, they spurred on their camels. I should therefore have received incurable wounds, had I not formed the violent but necessary resolution of throwing myself off, and of walking on the sand. This I accomplished, and in falling I sustained no other hurt but that of having my body dreadfully pricked by the thistles, with which, as I have already said, the whole ground was covered.

Towards evening, having perceived a thick smoke, I imagined that we were approaching some hamlet, where we should find something to eat, and above all, something to allay our intolerable thirst; but, in a short time, I observed nothing but a few bushes, in which our guide had taken

taken up his lodging. Worn out with fatigue, I retired behind one of them, to wait for the relieving hand of death; but scarcely had I stretched myself out on the ground, when an Arab belonging to our company came, and made me get up to unload his camel.

This insult I resented, and afterwards found that it had a good effect.

I saw preparations going forward which gave me great uneasiness. They made flints red hot in a large pan, raised up a huge stone which was at the foot of a bush, dug up the earth, and all the Arabs frequently repeating my name, burst out into loud fits of laughter. They then called to me and obliged me to approach the hole which they had dug in the ground, while the person whom I had beaten made different signs with his hand. He drew it often backwards and forwards against his throat, as if he intended to cut it, or give me to understand that they were resolved to serve me in the same manner. However resolute I was, and determined to defend myself, these gestures were by no means pleasing; but my apprehensions were soon converted into surprise, when I beheld them take from the pit, which I had approached, a goat's skin full of water, a small leathern bag, containing barley meal, and a goat newly

newly killed. The sight of these provisions restored me to my former tranquillity, though I did not know for what purpose they intended the flints which were heating in the fire. At length I saw them fill with water a large wooden vessel, into which they had poured some barley meal, and these red hot flints being thrown into the water, served to make it boil. In this manner our masters made a kind of paste, which they kneaded afterwards with their hands, and swallowed without chewing it. As for us slaves, we had nothing to eat but some of this paste, which was thrown to us upon a carpet, used by our patron to put under his feet whilst he repeated his prayers, and in the night-time as a matrafs to sleep upon. After having kneaded this leaven a long time, he gave it to me, that I might divide it amongst my companions. One can scarcely imagine how disagreeable it was to the taste. The water with which it was mixed had been procured on the sea shore, and had been preserved afterwards in the skin of a goat newly killed. To prevent it from corrupting, they had added to it a kind of pitch, which rendered the smell of it doubly noxious. The same water was our only drink, and bad as it was, our allowance of it was extremely scanty.

The

The next day, at dinner time, our masters regaled themselves with raw fat, which they appeared to be remarkably fond of. As soon as the meat was roasted, or rather baked, they took it from the earth, and these Arabs, without giving themselves time to free it from the sand which adhered to it, devoured it with incredible voracity. When they had thoroughly gnawed the bones, they made use of their nails to scrape off the remaining flesh, and then threw them to us, telling us to eat quickly, and to reload the camels, that our journey might not be retarded.

The women, as we passed some tents, still more ferocious than the men, took pleasure in tormenting us, while our masters durst scarcely oppose them. Having retired a small distance from my load, I perceived a man taking aim at me with a double-barrelled fusée *, upon which I presented my breast to him, and desired him to fire. This firmness astonished him greatly, and his surprise tended to confirm me in my opinion, that these people are impressed with awe when one appears not to fear them. I was going up to this

* Some years before, several vessels employed in the slave trade had been cast away upon this coast. As the Arabs plundered them, it is not astonishing that they should have fire arms among them.

man, when a stone from an unknown hand, though I suspected it came from that of his wife, struck me on the head, and deprived me of all sensation for a few moments.

After three days rest among the Arabs of the tribe of Roussye, we resumed our journey, to penetrate farther into the country, where we were to join the families of our conductors. At the end of sixteen days, during which we had been exposed to the greatest fatigue, and to dreadful miseries, we at length reached the place of our destination, in a most wretched and extenuated condition.

Being observed upon the brow of a hill, which conducted to the habitation of our masters, several of these black slaves, whose business generally is to keep the camels, came to meet them, in order to kiss their feet, and enquire after their health. A little farther on, the children made the air resound with shouts of joy, and the women standing up, through respect, waited at the doors of their tents for the arrival of their husbands. As soon as they approached, they advanced towards them with an air of submission, and each laying her right hand upon the head of her husband, kissed it, after having prostrated herself before him. When this ceremony was finished, they began to satisfy their

their curiosity with regard to us, and soon after to load us with abuse; but they did not stop here, they even spat in our faces, and pelted us with stones. The children too, copying their example, pinched us, pulled our hair, and scratched us with their nails, whilst their cruel mothers ordered them to attack sometimes one, and sometimes another, and took pleasure in causing them to torment us. Exhausted with despair, hunger, and thirst, we had impatiently wished for the moment of our arrival, but little did we foresee the new torments that were reserved for us.

After our masters had made a division of their slaves, the principal favourite of the Talbe came and ordered Mr. Devoise, Mr. Baudrè, and myself, who had fallen to the share of her husband, to unload the camels, to clean a kind of kettle which she had, and to go and pull up some roots to make a fire. While she was employed in signifying her will to us, her husband was quietly enjoying a sound sleep on the knees of one of his concubines.

The hope of soon obtaining my liberty, inspired me with sufficient courage to support the severities to which this diabolical woman exposed me. I set out, therefore, to collect some wood; but what was my surprise when, on my return, I beheld

beheld two of my companions dreadfully beaten, extended upon the sand. They had been treated in this manner because their strength being entirely exhausted, they had not been able to perform the task assigned them. I awaked my master by my repeated cries, and though I as yet spoke the language very imperfectly, I endeavoured to address him in the following terms: "Have you then conducted us hither to cause us to be butchered by a cruel woman? Think of the promise you made me. Conduct me without delay either to Senegal or to Morocco; if you do not, I will cause all the effects I gave you to be taken from you."

My passion scarcely knew any bounds, and several neighbours who saw us, having approached towards me, my master appeared to be under great uneasiness, as he was afraid that I would mention the quantity of the effects which he had received from me.

Addressing himself to his wife, "I forbid you," said he, "to require from him the least service that may be painful to him, and I desire that when thou doest, he may not obey thee." From that moment this favourite conceived an implacable hatred against me.

The

The end of August was now approaching, and I did not see the smallest preparations made for our journey. I had already asked Sidy Mahamet what he was waiting for, in order to conduct me to Senegal. His answer was, that he was looking for strong vigorous camels, which might be capable of supporting the fatigues of such a journey, and that he would set out as soon as he had procured them. I was the more earnest in intreating him not to delay, as the nights now began to be very incommodious, the dew often wetting us behind the bushes, which served us as a kind of shelter. In this dew, however, we found a resource, since by collecting it with our hands from our bodies, it served to quench our thirst, the burning heat of which the coolness of the night did not allay, and we preferred this liquor to our own urine, which we were often obliged to use. Having spoken to my master a second time, he made me such a reply as convinced me that he was sincere. "Dost thou think," said he, "that during the present excessive heat it would be possible to travel without provisions, and above all without water? We should find great difficulty to approach Senegal, as the river has inundated all the neighbouring plains, and we should have

much to fear from the Arabs of the tribe of Trargea, who are our enemies. "I tell thee the truth," added he, "we must wait till the month of October."

C H A P. CIV.

A CHANGE OF MR. BRISSON'S RELIGION IS ATTEMPTED.

WHEN the Arabs were nearly destitute of provision, as we were Christians, the dogs fared better than us, and it was in the basons destined for their use, that we received our allowance. The object in view was, to effect a change in our religion; but to this we would not submit, although our food now was raw snails, and herbs and plants trodden under foot by the multitude.

A young female Moor, whose flocks fed with mine, undeceived me as to the hopes I had entertained of liberty from the promises of Sidy Mahammet, my master; information which made my labours still more irksome and insupportable.

I now

I now no longer met in the fields my companions in misfortune; but I above all regretted the loss of the Captain. His company had often consoled me in my distresses, and I found a kind of alleviation in discoursing with him on our sufferings, and the hopes which we had of being restored to our country. One evening, when the coolness of the weather had invited my camels to stray farther than usual, I was obliged to follow them to a neighbouring hamlet, where I beheld a spectacle horrible indeed. The unfortunate Captain, scarcely distinguishable but by the colour of his body, lay stretched out lifeless upon the sand. In his mouth he held one of his hands, which his great weakness had no doubt prevented him from devouring. He was so changed by hunger, that his body exhibited the most disgusting appearance. All his features were absolutely effaced.

A few days after, the second captain, having fallen down through weakness below an old gum tree, became a prey to the attacks of a monstrous serpent. Some famished crows by their cries frightened away the venomous animal, and alighting on the body of the dying man, were tearing him to pieces, while four savage monsters, still crueller than the furious reptile, beheld this scene with-

out offering him the least assistance. I attempted to run towards him, and to save his life if possible, but the barbarians stopped me, and after insulting me, said, "This Christian will soon become a prey to the flames." Finding my efforts vain, I hastened from this scene of horror; and not knowing whither I should direct my steps, I followed my sheep and my camels. When I arrived at the tents, my master, struck with my absent and distracted looks, having asked me what was the matter with me, "Go," replied I, "go a few steps hence, and behold what your cruelty, and that of your wife, are capable of producing. You have suffered my companion to expire; and because his bad state of health would not permit him to labour, you refused him the milk necessary for his subsistence."

Whilst I was speaking these words, I concealed my tears, as they would have excited only the laughter of these brutal monsters, who ordered me to go and bring some of the bloody clothes of the unhappy victim of their barbarity. I was fired with indignation at so indecent a proposal. My agitation, and the fern which I had eat to allay my hunger, brought on me a painful vomiting, followed by an almost total loss of strength. I was, however, able to retire behind a bush, where
I found

I found another wretched object, who desired to know the reason of my tears, and if I had seen Baudrè. "He is not far off," replied I. This was all I could, or wished to say; but my master's sister, who came to bring us some milk, cried out, "The crows now devour the entrails of Baudrè; your fate will soon be the same; you are good for nothing else."

My health, which had hitherto been better than I could have expected, now declined apace. My whole skin had been twice renewed, and a third time my body began to be covered, if I may use the expression, with scales like those of the Arabs; a change which was attended with great pain. The thorns over which I walked, had torn my feet to the quick; I could scarcely stand upright, and the large dogs, which were continually let loose upon me, and from which I could never disengage myself, without receiving dreadful wounds, rendered me altogether incapable of guarding the camels. To add to my misfortunes, the excessive heats, about the end of February and March, had dried up all the water in that part of the country; and a single drop of rain had not fallen to moisten the fields which I had sown. Our cattle, no longer finding pasture, were on the eve of perishing, when at length the two

tribes of Labdesseba, and the Ouadelims, after having each deliberated on their present situation, resolved to go in search of some spot occupied by more industrious hands.

I was in this dismal situation, when I accidentally met with an Arab, who had in his train a Christian slave, whom I found had been baker to our ship. This Arab disposed of him to my master, at a moderate price; and he was assigned to perform my ordinary labour. I had now leisure to recruit my strength a little; but the unhappy baker paid dearly for the knowledge which he had in the art of preparing food. After eating all the snails which we could find in the neighbourhood, we fed upon the flesh of the sheep that had died, either of hunger or disease; and this suggested to us the idea of strangling a few kids in the night-time, persuaded that our masters would throw them away, as their law does not permit them to eat the flesh of any animal, unless it has died by the knife; but suspicion falling on us, at length we were caught in the fact, and narrowly escaped having our throats cut.

As I was preparing one morning to set out to cut wood, poor Devoise, addressing me in a faint and languishing voice, said, "The illusion is now at an end. Hitherto I flattered myself with the hopes

hopes of again seeing my native country, but I perceive my strength forsake me. This night, yes, my dear friend, for this title justly belongs to you, after all your care, you will find my body here arrested by the cold hand of Death. Adieu, my friend, the tears which you strive to hide from me, are a new proof of your attachment. Write to my brother; tell him that I remembered him in my last moments, and that I die with the sentiments of a true Christian. Adieu, my last moment is nearer than I expected; I expire!"—He spoke no more; that moment indeed was his last.

Though I had known Mr. Devoise only since our departure from France, I was sensibly affected in losing him. I went into the fields to seek for the only companion whom I had now remaining, and on our return we were ordered to carry away the body of our friend, and to dig a very deep pit, in order, as the Arabs said, to conceal that Christian from the sight of their children. We performed our last duty to him with much difficulty; for being too weak to carry him, we were obliged to drag him by the feet for three quarters of a league, and the earth at the brink of the pit which I had dug, giving way under me, I

14

tumbled

tumbled in first, and was very near expiring under the weight of the body.

A few days after we quitted this place to search for another more fertile ; and encamped in the neighbourhood of several other tribes, where I found one of our sailors named Denoux, who was a slave like myself. Having asked him what was become of his companions, " Six of them," said he, " were carried away by the emperor's son soon after our shipwreck, and have since gone to France. Mr. Taffaro, the surgeon-major, died of the blows he received on the head with a large stick ; Mr. Raboin, second-lieutenant, expired also in dreadful torture. Others, to avoid the horrors of famine, have renounced their religion. As for me, Sir, I shall not be long in following those whom death has now freed from their miseries. Behold in what condition I am ; there is no kind of bad treatment to which I am not daily exposed."

At the information that some of the crew had returned to France, I conceived new hopes ; thinking the marine minister would send positive orders to reclaim the rest ; and such commands were actually issued, but the vice-consul at Morocco paid no attention to their execution. I was reflecting upon the causes of this total neglect,

glect, when, on retiring behind my bush, I was much astonished to see my master's camels returning without a guide. Being called to receive my portion of milk, when it was pretty late, and not seeing the poor baker, I took the liberty of asking what was become of him; but the Arabs gave me a very cool answer, and drove me from their presence. Next morning early, a young Arab, employed in keeping the flocks, informed me that Sidy Mahammet, suspecting that the baker privately milked his camels, watched him, and having caught him in the fact, had seized him by the throat and strangled him.

I now remained the only slave in the hamlet, and I had no longer any companion to whom I could communicate my misfortunes. My situation became every day more and more deplorable; but I formed a resolution of not suffering myself to be affected by it.

This resolution, and the conduct I had observed towards those who wished to humble me, had procured me some consideration among the savages, so that from time to time I was suffered to lodge in the back of their tents; I even sometimes drank out of their vessels. My master, too, suffered me to remain at ease, and I was no longer required to guard his camels. It is true, that he

never spoke to me concerning my liberty ; but, even if he had, I should have paid very little attention to his words, for I was so well acquainted with his perfidy, that I had not the least confidence in him. It was, however, necessary for me to continue to make faggots, which I had done for some time past, in order to barter them for milk ; for thirst often drove me into the most inconceivable fits of madness. I saw the Arabs themselves in the greatest distress on this account. Several of them died of thirst and hunger, and the season did not admit of any relief. This was the fourth time that their crops had been destroyed by drought. This dismal situation had so irritated the minds of the inhabitants of the different tribes, that they made war upon one another. Milk had entirely failed them, and each tried who could carry off most cattle, in order that they might kill them and dry the flesh. Water was still scarcer, for there is little to be found in the desert, except towards the sea, and even then it is black, putrid, and brackish. This bad beverage, added to the want of pastures, keeps the Arabs always at a distance from the coasts. Destitute of every kind of provisions, no one attempted to pursue his journey; and it was in these circumstances that

that I beheld to what extremity men may be reduced through want. The Arabs who had the least milk, quenched their thirst from the bowels of the camels which they killed. They pressed a greenish kind of water from the filth found in the stomachs of these animals, which they preserved with great care, and often boiled their flesh in it. That which they procured from the bodies of their goats had the taste and smell of sweet fennel. Broth made of it never appeared to me disagreeable; but that procured from the camel was not so pleasing to the taste. What greatly astonished me was, that these animals, which never drink above twice or thrice in a year, and which eat only dried plants, should have such a prodigious quantity of water in their stomachs; and particularly the camel.

CHAP. CV.

MEANS WHICH OCCURRED TO SET MR. BRISSON
AT LIBERTY.

WITH a view to effect my liberty, I contrived to get the treasure I had given to the Arab again into my possession, that it might enable me to

traverse the desert, and bribe the Arabs to conduct me to Morocco. But Sidy Mahammet misfing it very shortly, he prevailed on me, by a variety of powerful arguments, to restore it once more. The principal inducement was a promise of being sent to Mogador, and in the mean time to be allowed a proper quantity of milk, both in the morning and evening.

Chance at length conducted Sidy Mouhammet, sheriff of the tribe of Trargea, to the place which I was watering with my tears ; and having seen me, he asked who I was. The Arabs told him my history, and they boasted above all of the great riches, in powder and fuses, which I was said to possess at Senegal. The sheriff immediately recollected me ; he asked me what situation I had been in at the island of St. Louis, and I returned a satisfactory answer to all his questions. Having looked at me nearer, he exclaimed, " What ! art thou Briffon ? " On my replying in the affirmative, he appeared greatly astonished, and addressing himself to the Arabs, " You do not know this Christian ; every thing at Senegal belongs to him." This man imagined that all the stores in the king's magazines, which he had seen me deliver, were my property ; and my master's brother-in-law, encouraged by this flattering

tering account of my riches, did not hesitate to purchase me, giving five camels in exchange.

I did not know that this bargain was concluded, when I was unsuspectedly filled both with surprise and joy. Having returned with my master from watering our camels, for the third time during three months, I was commanded by my mistress to carry a leather bucket, which she had borrowed, to a neighbouring tent, where I found Sidy Sellem, who called me, and bid me prepare to set out with him the next morning for Mogador. I had been flattered with this hope, and so often deceived, that I could scarcely persuade myself that he spoke in earnest. However, some appearance of preparation for the proposed journey, convinced me that his information was true. The old man himself renewed his protestations, upon which I was so transported, that I threw myself at his feet, wept, sighed, and laughed; in short, I did not know what I was doing. One must have known the value of liberty to feel or to form an idea of what I experienced, when I learned that my chains of servitude were about to be broken.

My former master then called me, and told me, that I no longer belonged to him. "I have discharged my promise," added he, "you are going to be restored to your country." On hearing these

these words, I forgot all my resentment, and gave myself up entirely to joy, which appeared to be doubled, when informed that I was to have a companion on my journey. "We are going to join him," said he, "a few paces hence." I was far from suspecting that he meant the unfortunate baker. When I saw him, I asked him by what miracle he had been brought to life again. "Alas!" replied he, "I do not know how I escaped death. Sidy Mahammet surprized me one day milking his camels. He ran up to me, gave me several blows, and squeezed my throat so closely, that I fell almost lifeless at his feet. When I recovered my senses, I was astonished to find myself alone. My neck was covered with blood: you may see the marks of his nails. I crawled in the best manner I could into the cavern of the rock, the echo of which several times repeated the voice of my barbarous master, who returned to search for me, or at least to see in what situation I was. I had resolved either to starve myself to death, or to make for the sea coast, in hopes of meeting with some vessel. I indeed arrived there after a journey of ten days, having had no food during that time but snails, and nothing else to drink but my own urine. I had scarcely advanced a few steps among the rocks,

in order to hail a small sloop which lay at anchor near the land, with which the sea was bordered, when I was seized by two young Arabs, who took the greatest care of me, and since that time I have been their slave. They appeared to be much milder in their disposition than the Arabs in the inland parts of the country, and they are much more industrious. About a fortnight ago they informed me that they were going to conduct me to the sultan, and I am inclined to believe that the reason of their bringing me hither was, that they had agreed upon this place of rendezvous with your master, after having informed him that they had got me in their possession."

Sidy Mahammet's behaviour, when he took his leave of me, was very affecting. "Adieu, my dear Briffon," said he, "you are going to undertake a long journey. You will soon perceive how great reason I had to be afraid of it. I wish no danger may befall you, and that your passage by sea may be more fortunate than the last. Adieu, forget not to send my wife the scarlet cloth. Charge it to the account of Sidy Sellem: once more adieu, my dear Briffon!" The tears which accompanied the last words, might have imposed on me, had I not known how far this man could carry the art of dissimulation.

CH A P. CVI.

OF MR. BRISSON'S HARDSHIPS ON HIS JOURNEY
TO MOROCCO.

WE had been now sixty-six days on our journey; my strength was exhausted, my legs were prodigiously swelled, my feet were all covered with running sores, and I should have infallibly sunk under my misfortunes, had not my master, to revive me, said every now and then, "Behold the sea; dost thou not see the ships; have a good heart, we are almost at our journey's end." Hope supported me, and, at the moment when I least expected it, I at length perceived the element of which I had so much cause to complain, and which was going yet once more to be the arbiter of my fate. On quitting a labyrinth of broom bushes, we arrived at the top of a few little sand-hills, when to my inexpressible joy—a joy of which the reader can scarcely form any idea—I saw the French colours, and those of several other nations, floating over the poops of different vessels lying in the harbour of Mogador, which I as yet knew only by the name of Soira. "Well, Brisson," said

said my master, "speak, then, art thou not content? dost thou not see the vessels? Are there any French? I promised to conduct thee to the consul, and you see that I have kept my word. But what is the matter; thou art quite silent?" Alas! what could I answer? I could scarcely give vent to my tears; and to articulate the least word was impossible. I surveyed the sea, the colours, the ships, and the city, and thought that every thing I beheld was only an illusion. The unhappy baker, no less exhausted than myself, and equally surprized, united his sighs with mine, while my tears bathed the hands of the generous old man who had been the means of my enjoying so agreeable a prospect.

On entering the city, having met two Europeans, "Whoever you may be," said I, "behold the misery of an unfortunate man, and deign to assist him. Grant me some consolation, and revive my drooping spirits. Where am I? Of what country are you? What day of the month is it? What day of the week is it?" I found that I had addressed myself to two of my countrymen, from Bourdeaux, who, after surveying me for some moments, went to inform Mess. Duprat and Cabannes, who are always ready, and consider it as part of their duty, to afford every assistance in

in their power to those unhappy people who are driven upon these coasts. These gentlemen came to meet me, and, without being disgusted by my external appearance, which was far from being inviting, they clasped me in their arms, and shed tears of joy, because they had it in their power to relieve an unfortunate man. "All your misfortunes, Sir, are now," said they, "at an end. Come along with us, we will endeavour to make you forget them."

CHAP. CVII.

MR. BRISSON'S AUDIENCE WITH THE EMPEROR OF MOROCCO.

WHILST I was waiting for an audience, I saw a captain review his troop. He was seated on the ground, with his chin resting upon his two fists, and his arms placed upon his knees, which were bent upwards. He made his soldiers advance two by two, then gave his orders, and the latter, after prostrating themselves before him, retired to their posts, or went to enjoy their amusement.

Five

Five or six of the guards arrived with white staves, jumped suddenly upon me, seized me by the collar, as if I had been a malefactor, and having ordered two large folding doors, like those of our barns, to be opened, pushed me rudely into a kind of enclosure, where I in vain looked for any thing that might announce the majesty of the throne. Having walked fifteen or twenty paces past a kind of wheelbarrow, such as those commonly to be met with in every street of Paris, my attendants made me suddenly turn round, and pushing me in a very brutal manner, ordered me to prostrate myself before this wheelbarrow, in which the emperor sat amusing himself with stroking his toes, which he held upon one of his knees. He looked at me for some time, and then asked me if I was not one of those Christian slaves, whose vessel had been shipwrecked upon his coasts about a year before; what was the intention of my voyage to Senegal, &c. "You were lost through your own fault," said he. "Why did you not keep further from the shore? Art thou rich?" added he. "Art thou married?"

I had scarcely returned an answer to these questions, when he ordered paper and ink to be brought him, with a small reed, which he used as a pen,

a pen, and with which he traced out the four cardinal points, to shew me that Paris lay towards the north. He then wrote down a few cyphers, after the French manner, as far as twelve, asking me if I knew them. He also put several other questions of the same kind to me, to display the great extent of his learning.

“Tell me,” continued the prince, “did the mountaineers treat thee well; did they take much of thy effects?” I readily replied to all his questions, and observed to him, that in proportion as we approached the capital, we found the manners of the inhabitants milder, and more civilized. “My authority does not extend,” replied he, “over all the country which thou hast traversed, or rather my orders cannot be conveyed so far. With whom didst thou come?” “With Sidy Sellem, of the tribe of Rouffye.” “I know him,” said the emperor, “let him be brought hither.” A moment after my master was introduced. The emperor commanded one of his guards to take care of me and the baker, till he should receive fresh orders, and to supply me with food from the royal kitchen. This guard appeared to be greatly surpris'd, that the sultan should have discoursed so long with a slave.

The

The French Consul at this time was luckily in great favour with the emperor, on account of some presents which he had made him. For this reason the emperor set all the prisoners at liberty, and myself among the rest ; so that we had now only to consider of the necessary measures for our return to France.

CH A P. CVIII.

MR. BRISSON'S SENTIMENTS RESPECTING THE
EMPEROR OF MOROCCO, AND THE CONDUCT
OF THE CONSULS.

MAY I be permitted to observe how extraordinary it is, that a prince so little to be dreaded as the prince of Morocco, should oblige the different powers of Europe to send ambassadors to him, and that he should even dictate laws to them.

There is not a single sovereign, who dares to send a representative to his court, without making him at the same time considerable presents ; and what envoy would present himself, without having his hands full ?

How

How happens it that the consuls have not, by common consent, represented to their respective sovereigns, that the Emperor of Morocco becomes every day more and more powerful by the supplies which they themselves furnish him? Twenty years ago this prince was absolutely destitute of resources. He had neither materials, nor any place for casting cannons; and he was equally in want of wood for building ships, of ropes, of nails, and even of workmen. It is France, and other European powers, that assist him; else the Emperor of Morocco would be of little consideration. His superb batteries of brass cannons, twenty-four, thirty-six, and forty-eight pounders, were furnished by Holland, Spain, England, and France.

England has done more than other nations, by selling him those beautiful cannons which were taken on the floating batteries. Mogador, that part of it which is next to Morocco, is built in an advantageous situation. Its batteries are well disposed, and there are cannon at each embrasure; but they are there only in a manner for show, as they have no carriages, and are supported only by brick-work. There are no workmen in the country capable of mounting them on carriages, nor is there wood proper for making them.

them. Did a few vessels only wait for the sailing of those small frigates, which are almost all unfit for sea, except only two, nothing would be easier than to prevent them from returning, and to block up the ports of Mogador, Rabat, and Sallee.

What would become of his commerce, and, above all, his marine, did the Christian princes cease to assist him, contrary to the interests of humanity ! Would England and Spain unite only for a moment, Tangiers, his most beautiful port, would soon be so far ruined, that it could not afford shelter to his subjects, who, destitute of ships, would soon be obliged to give over their piracies.

If the consuls of different nations have never made these observations, and if they have never pointed out the means of curbing the insolence of the Emperor of Morocco, it is because they are at the head of the commerce which these different powers carry on in that part of the world. The ——— consul bought up almost all the corn of the country, and ships were sent off with it according to his consignments. The French consul is the only one who does not engage in commerce. I can positively assert, that these representatives, instead of furnishing their courts with

with the means of diminishing the power of the Emperor, never cease to add to his strength, and to incite him to make new pretensions. How much we assist these pirates to hurt the advantageous trade which we might carry on ! Their situation renders them very dangerous ; but if we leave them only their situation, it would be impossible for them to profit much by it.

Let impartial people pay a visit to that country, let them speak with the same sincerity as I do, and they will, no doubt, be convinced, that the Emperor of Morocco, of all the princes in the world, would be the *least able to do mischief*, did the sovereigns of Europe cease to furnish him with succours.

CHAP. CIX.

ON THE IGNORANCE OF THE ARABS.

THE Arabs of the desert are so ignorant, that they not only consider themselves as the first people in the world, but they have the foolish vanity to believe, that the sun rises for them only.

Several

Several of them said to me *, “ Behold that luminary ! which is unknown in thy country. During the night thou art not enlightened, as we are, by that heavenly body, which regulates our days and our fasts. His children † point out to us the hours of prayer. You have neither trees nor camels, sheep, goats, nor dogs. Are your women made like ours ? ” “ Indeed,” said another, counting my fingers and toes, “ he is made like us ; he differs only in his colour and language, which astonishes me. Do you sow barley in your houses ? meaning our ships.” No, answered I ; we sow our fields almost in the same season as you. How ! cried out several of them, do you inhabit the earth ? We believed that you were born and lived on the sea.

C H A P. CX.

ENTERTAINING INFORMATION RESPECTING
BARBARY: ADDRESSED TO DR. FORRESTIER,
AT ROME, A D. 1785.

BEHOLD me, then, my dear doctor, indulging my passion for travelling and natural history. For some days, I have been an inha-

* Briffon.

† So they call the stars.

bitant of the ancient Numida, where I arrived under the most unlucky auspices. The plague has ravaged the country for more than two years, and the negligence of the inhabitants propagates it from one tribe to another.

Besides this cruel scourge, the Arabs and Moors have been painted to me as the most inhuman and ferocious beings in nature, hating the Christians, both from a principle of religion, and from the prejudice of education.

These circumstances are alarming, especially for me, who have a desire of traversing the country. However, I arm myself with patience, and I hope, that by gradually putting myself into a condition of avoiding the contagion, and of travelling with safety, I may hazard a few excursions. It appears to me, that the nations who bring their grain to *La Calle*, and who keep up an intercourse with the Europeans, ought to be a little more tractable. In my account of this country, I shall begin with them; but I confess to you, that the appearance and dress of these Arabs fill me with terror. Notwithstanding this, I must accustom myself to them, for I do not intend to stop here, on a barren rock, where three hundred men, Corsicans and Provincials, labour, to enrich a few French merchants.

My

My passage hither was agreeable, but I could not help feeling some painful and melancholy sensations on losing sight of the coasts of Provence. The silent tear often stole down my cheeks in crossing that extent of sea, which was going to separate me again from my friends and relations; but in proportion as our vessel approached the African shores, which had been described to me as barren and sandy, I experienced an inexpressible pleasure. I every where observed hills covered with verdure, delightful prospects, and immense plains enameled with flowers. Considering this as a good omen, scarcely had I landed, when I began to stroll through the fields, without thinking of nourishment, or of refreshing myself after the fatigues of my voyage. I had scarcely put my foot on shore, when I found the *Anthyllis barba Jovis*, the *Spartium Monospermum*, the *Passerina hirsuta*, the *Chamærops humilis*, and several other rare plants, which I made haste to gather, as if I had been afraid of never returning to the same spot. Thus, in the name of Botany, I took possession of the country, and paid my first respects to the African Flora. I presented myself before the governor of La Calle, with a bunch of flowers in my hand, more occupied with my riches than the marks of politeness which I ought to have shewn, and I

caused no less surprise to some Frenchmen who saw our meeting, than to the Moors, whom curiosity had drawn towards the shore. These uncultivated and wild coasts, which inspire those who land on them with sadness and languor, appeared to me then to be the most beautiful garden of nature.

How many objects have I seen in this barbarous country worthy the notice of the traveller, whether he fixes his attention on the fertility of a soil abandoned to nature, or on the idle and wandering life of the Moors and the Bedouin Arabs! I shall some time hereafter give you an account of all these objects, but at present I have seen too little, and in too general a manner, to particularize my ideas respecting them. I have the honor to be, &c.

POIRET.

CHAP. CXI.

A SINGULAR ADVENTURE.

LA CALLE, situated at the distance of thirty-six leagues east from Tunis, is built upon a barren rock, of very small extent. It is the principal

pal factory belonging at present to the Royal French African Company, and is under the direction of an agent, who has the title of governor, and fifteen subaltern officers.

The Moors are excluded from this place, except a few, who are admitted as hostages, or employed in manual labour. The inhabitants are in number between three and four hundred, the greater part Corsicans or Provincials.

Women destined to comfort the useful citizen amidst his labours, and, by the gentleness of their manners, to soften the rusticity of those of the other sex, are entirely excluded from *La Calle*. If the governor has sometimes obtained permission to carry his lady thither, commotions and troubles have always thence resulted, which have not permitted him long to enjoy the pleasure of her company. Those who intend to visit this country, must resolve to break the most endearing bonds of nature, to sell their arms, and even to sacrifice their lives in the service of a company, who give themselves very little trouble, whatever others may suffer for them.

The privation of women makes every one here dull and dejected. Strangers, divided by their private interests, jealous one of the other, obliged to unite through necessity, to detest one another

through envy, who are held together by no tie, and who have no amusements to engage their vacant hours, will never form an amicable society, in which concord and a mutual desire to render one another happy, in some measure make up for the want of women.

Hence result a melancholy sameness, a languor of spirits, and an anxious desire to return to one's family and friends.

If the want of the company of women be a punishment for the inhabitants of La Calle, the condition of the men in this accursed country is no less a source of disquiet and uneasiness to those wives whose husbands are obliged to leave them behind them in France. Some time ago, a poor mechanic, at Marseilles, reduced to beggary through want of employment, resolved to go over to La Calle, and to quit his wife, whom he tenderly loved. He took care not to make her acquainted with the exact state of a country which perhaps he did not thoroughly know himself; but the woman having remained a long time without hearing any news of her husband (whether his letters had miscarried, or that he neglected to write) went and procured whatever information she could respecting La Calle. Her uneasiness was not a little increased by what she heard; and,

not

not being able to resist the fears which her tenderness inspired, she earnestly entreated that she might be permitted to follow him. This favour being constantly refused her, she had recourse, in this extremity, to an expedient which love suggested ; she concealed her sex under the dress of a workman, presented herself at the office, and got her name registered among the number of the passengers who were going to La Calle.

During the passage, which she supported with an heroic courage, her figure and youth interested the captain and all the crew in her favour, and they sincerely lamented the fate of this poor youth, reduced to the necessity of going to inhabit a country so destructive, especially to young people, and to those of a delicate constitution. Such conversation was to this woman like so many stabs of a dagger. Forgetting her own danger, she thought only of that to which her husband was exposed, and to which, perhaps, he had already fallen a victim.

When the vessel arrived on the coast of Africa, and was about to touch at *Bonne*, on account of contrary winds, whilst this woman was searching her trunk for clothes in order to go on shore, some of the sailors observed a few articles of female dress among her effects, and this discovery

gave rise to conjectures which her figure seemed to confirm. Their suspicions were soon realized ; and, when she was known to be a woman, she would have suffered much from the brutality of the sailors, had not the captain, to whom she confessed her intention, taken her under his protection.

On the first fair wind the vessel set sail for La Calle, where she no sooner arrived, than the captain presented himself before the governor with this faithful spouse, who could not answer any question till informed that her husband was still alive. This news filled her with so much joy, that she had almost fainted. The governor, desirous of enjoying the interview, sent for the husband. The husband appeared ; but he was quite astonished at seeing a young workman throw his arms about his neck, without being able to utter a single word for sighs and sobbing. Being at length told that this person was his own wife, he soon recollected her, but he could scarcely believe his own eyes. Agitated both by the keenest emotions of tenderness, they attempted to speak, but their words were every moment interrupted by their mutual caresses ; while their eyes, blinded by tears, hardly perceived the spectators, in whose breasts this affecting scene excited the most
pleasing

pleasing sensations. The governor gave them private apartments ; and the husband, overcome by the affection of his wife, embarked with her for Marseilles *, where he soon after found that employment which he wished for. I have the honor to be, &c.

POIRET.

C H A P. CXII.

ON THE TRADE OF BARBARY.

THE principal trade of Barbary is granted exclusively to a company established at Marseilles, under the name of the Royal African Company, and which owes its principal existence to the coral fishery. This fishery for a long time has been the base and foundation of its traffic. It was formerly a harvest, the produce of which, according to calculation, was considered as invariable ; which alone supplied the expences necessary for so great an establishment, and afforded a considerable profit besides ; but at that time the fishery was very

* I returned to France with the captain who had brought this heroic female to Barbary : he confirmed the truth of all these circumstances which I have related.

abundant, the expences attending it were much less, the sale was equally great, and perhaps more advantageous; and whatever revolutions the other branches of the Company's trade might experience, this was sufficient to support it, if not in a flourishing condition, at least in that state of moderation and solidity from which a commercial company ought never to depart. For a certain number of years this fishery has always been decreasing; at present it is so much reduced, that the Company entirely depend upon the trade they carry on in corn and wool, to which they join that of hides and wax, though it derives a very small profit from the two last articles.

Wool, barley, and corn, are the articles upon which the Company gain most; they purchase these commodities with Spanish dollars which have been filed; from each dollar they take about the value of eight-pence sterling, and make them pass in Barbary for four shillings and six-pence. From this speculation there arises a considerable profit, which amounts to about ten per cent. The principal houses belonging to the Company are at *La Calle, Bonne, Tabarque, and Collo*, of which I shall have occasion to speak hereafter.

This Company was established under Louis XIV. and its principal factory was then at the *Bastion*

of

of France, situated in the eastern extremity of the kingdom of Algiers. It had in view two objects, the coral fishery and the commerce of grain, which it shared then with an English Company established at La Calle. The English, however, failed; and the trade has remained exclusively in the hands of the French.

Where-ever the Europeans have penetrated, from a thirst of gain; where-ever they have offered to the natives, often half savage, their friendship and the advantages of commerce, they have almost always become despots, and repaid by treachery and crimes the confidence which has been reposed in them. It is thus that the Spaniards established themselves in America, the English, the Dutch, and the French, in the East-Indies, and various parts of the globe. Batavia, Peru, and Madagascar, are still proofs of this assertion. If they spared some few of those nations among whom they settled, they have at least rendered them tributary; and instead of paying for liberty to trade, the European merchant has demanded to be recompensed for treating those with humanity from whom he had first required only a fair and peaceable exchange.

This, however, my dear doctor, is not the

case with the trade established among the Moors on the coast of Barbary. If the merchant in the Indies and America is proud and haughty, in Africa he is submissive and cringing. He pays, and very dearly, for the right of purchasing the productions of that rich, but too much neglected country. The greatest exactions fall principally upon the African Company. The States of Barbary do not grant it the exclusive privilege of its trade, but in consideration of an annual tribute; and it is obliged to take their provisions at the same price as that at which they are offered by other occasional merchants, though the Company pays a considerable tribute.

For liberty to fish for coral on the coasts of the kingdom of Algiers, and to obtain an exclusive right to the commerce of grain, wool, wax, and hides, in its different factories, the Company pays to the Dey of Algiers about 4,000*l.* sterling annually, and is obliged, besides, to send him two boxes of the most beautiful coral. The duties which the Bey of Constantine acquires from the corn which he causes to be sold at Bonne, bring him in nearly cent. per cent. and for wool he is paid at the rate of about three shillings per hundred weight.

The

The European trader, upon these coasts, is under the necessity of enduring much oppression, and many acts of injustice, in order to carry on trade without interruption. The inhabitants of La Calle are more exposed to these, than those of any other place. Whenever the Moors make their appearance, they are obliged to give them bread, oil, salt, and many other articles, which they ask with the utmost insolence. If, harrassed by their demands, one refuses them the most trifling thing, they give vent to threats, which they almost always execute, and with the greater confidence, as they are sure of never being punished. The malecontent conceals himself behind a bush in some defile, and the first Christian who appears becomes the unhappy victim of his resentment. Besides, it is not difficult for a Moor to gain over his whole nation to his interests: so that, instead of one enemy, an hundred are to be encountered. One must then think of an accommodation, endeavour to appease the discontented person; and treaties of peace are generally concluded with granting to the Moors every thing they desire; and even then one is not certain of being in safety: on the contrary, it is when the Moors see us defenceless that they attack us with the greatest success. They begin

begin their hostilities by carrying away part of our herds, which are restored to us but on the most humiliating conditions.

In short, my dear doctor, to convince you how much the name of a Frenchman is despised on this coast, it will be sufficient to mention only *the Law of Blood*. If a Moor kills a Christian (except in time of war) he is fined three hundred dollars, which he never pays; if, on the contrary, a Christian kills a Moor, even in his own defence, the company are bound to pay five hundred dollars, one farthing of which is never remitted. The Moors, who neglect no opportunity of robbing us, often assassinate one of their own countrymen, deposit the body privately in the neighbourhood, of the place, accuse the Christians of the murder, and oblige them to pay the fine.

It thence follows, that we must suffer every thing from the Moors, grant them every thing, forget their insults, endure their contempt, and receive from these barbarians the most unjust and humiliating laws. For example, would you not be surprised that the Company have not the right of naming their own *Truchemans*, or Interpreters? This right belongs to the Moors, who always take care to choose those, whom they consider as fittest for cheating the Christians.

POIRET.

CHAP. CXIII.

M. POIRET MAKES EXCURSIONS FROM LA CALLE IN QUEST OF FLOWERS AND PLANTS.

I HAVE not been able, my dear doctor, to hold out any longer. Notwithstanding the contagion, notwithstanding the civil wars, and notwithstanding the representations of the Governor of La Calle, and of the other officers, I have passed our barriers. I with regret beheld the spring gliding away, and the flowers disappearing with it. Though it is only yet the end of May, the sun is still so scorching, that it is impossible after nine in the morning to endure his heat. I have, however, for a fortnight past, been going through various adventures, in a dress no less remarkable than that of the celebrated Robinson Crusoe; but you yourself shall judge. Over a light vest and a pair of breeches, I wear the Arabian dress, which is a kind of large hooded cloak, that reaches to my heels. It is all of one piece without seams, close before, and ornamented with silk fringes at the extremities, on the breast, and at the end of the hood.

hood. The latter part is fixed on the head, by means of a strong cord of camel's hair, several yards in length: among the Moors it supplies the place of a turban. To secure myself from the sun, I wear, besides this, an enormous hat made of palm leaves, which many of the Arab chiefs make use of during the summer. Thus, in appearance, half Moor half Christian, I traverse the burning sands of Barbary. My complexion gradually assumes the dusky tint of the Africans, and nothing is wanting but a tufted beard, with naked legs and arms, to disguise me entirely. Though my principal object is to procure plants and insects, I walk always prepared for war, after the manner of the Arabs. A large leathern girdle furnished with excellent cartridges, a pair of pistols, a kind of poignard, a sabre, and a fusée, are generally the armour of every Arab. In this dress, I boldly present myself before the tents of the Moors, accompanied by a domestic and two of the natives, whom I carried with me from La Calle, where they had learned to speak a little of the dialect of Provence. I, however, trust neither to my own courage, nor to the arms which I carry. Before I penetrate into the country, I take care to learn, by means of my interpreters, whether the nation which we intend to visit be connected by trade with La Calle;

Calle; whether it is subjected to any chief; whether a Christian may appear there in safety; and, above all, whether the plague has made any ravage in it. I never expose myself, but according to their report; and hitherto I have experienced no kind of danger, though, with respect to the plague, the accounts of the Arabs are little to be depended upon.

How shall I paint to you, my dear doctor, the confused and contradictory ideas which arose in my mind, on the first view of these Arab hordes? I had approached within half a gun-shot of about thirty tents, and was preparing to go up to them, when I was informed that the plague had made its appearance there eight days before. To avoid the danger of communication, without advancing any farther, I dismounted from my horse, as I had need of a little repose and nourishment. The spot where I then happened to be, was on the brink of a rivulet, the stream of which was cool, and perfectly limpid; bushes of rose-laurels, terebinth, and myrtle, formed around me an agreeable shade, and the landscape bounded by hills, clothed with the most beautiful verdure, was animated by the numerous herds which fed at a distance. Thus nature, by presenting this delightful view of a rural
and

and pastoral retreat, disposed my heart for joy, and transported me in idea to those happy ages, when men were all shepherds, and knew no other riches but their flocks, and the productions of the earth.

Occupied with these ideas, with the eye wandering over the beauties of this scene, and fixing my sight principally upon the low smoaky huts of the Arabs, I saw all of a sudden about a dozen of them, who were directing their steps towards me. I confess to you, my dear doctor, that, on the sight of these ferocious men, I could not suppress an emotion of fear, which in an instant dispelled all those ideas with which I had been so agreeably entertained. They were all armed, and I apprehended some attack from them; but the Moors who accompanied me assured me that there was no danger. As soon as they were near enough, I saluted them according to the custom of the country, and I ordered my interpreters to tell them to keep at a certain distance, on account of the contagion. With this request they readily complied, and squatting down in a circle around us, conversed with their countrymen for some time. They asked if I would have any milk. I replied in the affirmative; upon which two of them immediately set out, and returned soon after with each a
basin

bason full of it. I drank some of it, and notwithstanding their forward manner, and threatening air, I was sensible that they gave me a kind reception.

I expressed my gratitude by my gestures, and distributed among them a small quantity of powder and shot, which they requested. Forgetting then the picture which had been drawn to me of their manners, or rather attributing their ferocity to the despotism under which they groan, and perhaps to their intercourse with Europeans, who may have taught them to cheat, and to be dishonest, - I endeavoured to persuade myself, that the nearer man is to nature, the better he ought to be. I perceived in them the patriarchs of antiquity, devoted entirely to the care of their flocks, and free from that multiplicity of wants created by luxury. I beheld men to whom I was indebted for their hospitality, since they offered me an asylum in their tents; and if I did not find in them the affected politeness of Europe, I thought I perceived at least that rustic openness, such as it ought to be in the man of nature. It was then that in reasoning with myself, and suffering myself to be deceived by that desire which I would willingly indulge, of finding in all mankind a natural fund of goodness, I with pleasure gave way to an error,

error, which I had too much occasion afterwards to be sensible of.

When I took leave of these Arabs, having, from motives of prudence, declined entering into their tents, they accompanied me nearly half a mile, and when we parted, they wished me, in their own language, *happinefs* and *peace*. Being informed of the meaning of these expressions, I repeated them very affectionately, and congratulated myself that the first Arabic words which I pronounced served to express my gratitude. I have met with almost the same reception from the different Arab tribes among whom I have since been; but for some days I durst not venture to enter their tents, from a dread of the plague. As the weather was mild, and the sky serene, I caused a small hut to be erected for me of leaves at a little distance from their tents, and there I passed the night, stretched out on the green turf, where I enjoyed as sound a sleep, as if I had been in the most delicate bed. However, as danger, when viewed near, does not make so strong impressions, I have insensibly become reconciled to the tents of the Arabs. I am received there every evening, and I have the honour of being admitted to their repasts.

POIRET.

CHAP.

CH A P. CXIV.

ON THE DRESS OF THE BEDOUIN ARABS, AND
OF THE MOORS.

WHILST you, my dear friend, are admiring the master-pieces of eminent masters, amidst the celebrated ruins of Rome, I am traversing the plains of ancient Numidia. In this desert and uncultivated country, how many enjoyments, and what riches for the naturalist! How many useful lessons for the philosophical observer! You are seeking Romans in the Italians, and perhaps you no longer find in their figure and character that noble pride, and those traits of majesty and courage, which announced them to be the masters of the universe. I am more successful than you: in every Arab mountaineer I think I perceive a Getulian or a Numidian. But can I congratulate myself on these marks of resemblance in a people, who have retained the ferocity and manners of the first inhabitants of those countries. How humiliating it is for human nature to see almost all nations degenerate insensibly from the virtues of their ancestors, and preserve only their vices!

This,

This, however, is the picture which the history of all ages presents to us. Where at present shall we find the sages of Greece, the learned Egyptians, and the heroes of ancient Rome? We should in vain seek for them in their descendants, while the Asiatic has preserved his primitive effeminacy, and the barbarous African still thirsts after blood. How many figures worthy of exercising your pencil, have I already met with among the Moors! Eyes full of fire and courage, a ferocious look, manly and strong features, an aquiline nose, nervous arms, a tall figure, a haughty gait, legs, thighs, and shoulders, almost always naked, are the characteristic marks which distinguish the greater part of the Moors. Notwithstanding the proverb, they are not naturally black, as several writers think; they are born white, and remain so all their life time, when they are not exposed by their labours to the scorching beams of the sun. In cities the women have so fair a complexion, that they would eclipse the greater part of the ladies in Europe; but the female mountaineers being continually burnt by the sun, and remaining almost continually half naked, become even in their infancy of a brown colour, which approaches near to that of soot.

Their

Their dress is an interesting object, and I believe it to be very antient. I have been assured that towards the desert of Zaara, several of the Arabs go perfectly naked, I have indeed met with some who had no kind of vestment whatever, and others who had only a kind of light drawers; but the greater part wear a dress more or less simple, according to their wealth and condition. Some, I mean the poorer sort, who are consequently the most numerous, wrap themselves up in a piece of cloth several yards in length, which they roll, each according to his own manner, around the head and body. This dress is perfectly well described by Mr. Fenelon, when, speaking in his *Telemachus* of the customs of the Bœotians, he says, " Their dresses are easily made; for, in that mild climate, nothing is wore but a piece of fine light stuff, uncut, which they throw about their bodies in long folds, giving it whatever form they choose. * " Others add below, either a shirt like those of our women, or a tunic of woollen cloth without sleeves, which reaches as far as their knees. The richest wear besides this a kind of robe, much like the cloaks of our hermits, The fineness of their dress is still proportioned to their

* Book viii.

fortune. I have seen several Arab chiefs clad in woollen stuffs, which on the first view I have taken for very fine muslin, of an exceeding bright white colour. The Barbary wool has always been famous for its beauty.

The women for their dress wear a piece of stuff like that of the men, but they arrange it somewhat differently. They make a kind of robe of it, which covers several of those parts that the men leave naked. Besides this, the Moorish women wear several ornaments, which certainly do not contribute to set off their beauty. They wear their hair in tresses, and sometimes floating over their shoulders, while the men are shaved, and reserve only one tuft in the middle of the head. The ears, arms, and legs of a Moorish woman are ornamented with large iron rings; sometimes they add bits of coral. Coquettes, after their own manner, instead of rouge, which certainly would add very little embellishment to their dark complexions, they use gunpowder mixed with antimony, for tracing out various figures on their foreheads and above their eyelids. The men do the same on their arms, breasts, and hands: a little superstition is mixed with these mystical characters. If to supply those colours which they want, our European ladies were obliged

obliged to submit to an operation as painful as that employed by the Moorish women, I doubt much whether they would wish for any other charms than those bestowed by nature. The female Arabs, to render these marks indelible, prick their skins in numberless places with a needle, and when the blood ceases to flow they apply their powder finely pounded, and force it into the pores of the skin by repeated friction. These marks then cannot be effaced; and they free them from the trouble of laying their fictitious beauties every evening upon the table of their dressing room. I have seen many children, the nails of whose hands were dyed of a yellowish red, but this colour does not last.

The dress which I have described, is, above all, common among the wandering Arabs of the mountains and deserts. Those who live in cities vary more in their manner of dressing. Some go with their heads bare, or covered at most with a red bonnet; others wear a turban like the Turks, together with part of their accoutrements. They use slippers, but the mountaneers go always bare-footed.

The dress of the Moors is common to almost all the inhabitants of Africa, as far as Guinea, and even among the Arabs of Asia. Those who are

fond of antiquities, might make curious researches respecting the dress of the Africans and the Asiatic Arabs. What induces me to believe that it is very ancient, is that these people are absolutely ignorant of a variety of modes. A son never thinks of dressing any otherwise than his father, and, even if he should, their industry is so limited, that their workmen would find themselves much embarrassed, were they obliged to change the form of their dress, however troublesome it may be.

The habitations of the Moors are as simple as their dress: they inhabit only tents or huts, constructed with the branches of trees and reeds. A collection of several tents is called *douare*; there are some of them which contain ten, fifteen, twenty, and even above an hundred. These tents are placed circularly, in order that they may enclose their flocks in the middle during the night. If there be any vacant space between two tents, they fill it up with bushes and thorns, to exclude ferocious animals. The form of each tent is almost like that of a tomb, or of the keel of a vessel reversed, as Sallust says, when speaking of the habitations of the Numidians *. They are low,

* *Cæterum adhuc ædificia Numidarum agrestium quæ Mappalia illi vocant oblonga incurvis lateribus tecta, quasi navium carinæ sunt. Sall. Bell. Jugur.*

except those of their chiefs, which are extensive, and have a little more elevation. The cloth of which they are composed is of wool, very closely woven, and died either black or brown. The facility with which these habitations are transported makes the Moors often change their abode, according to the season, or as their wants may require. In winter they choose a southern exposure at the bottom of some hill; in summer they approach those places where there are plenty of pastures and abundance of springs.

An inventory of their furniture may soon be taken. They are acquainted with no other bed but the earth, upon which the most delicate spread a little straw, a mat, or a coarse carpet. A few earthen vessels for cooking, and to prepare their *courcouçon*, a wooden basin to draw water and to hold their milk, when they milk their cows, a goat's skin to churn butter, and two portable millstones to grind their corn, are all the apparatus of their kitchen.

You may readily suppose, after what I have said, that their repasts are neither sumptuous nor delicate. Indeed nothing can be more simple or frugal. They make only one meal a day that requires any preparation. Besides this they take nothing, or else they content themselves with

fond of antiquities, might make curious researches respecting the dress of the Africans and the Asiatic Arabs. What induces me to believe that it is very ancient, is that these people are absolutely ignorant of a variety of modes. A son never thinks of dressing any otherwise than his father, and, even if he should, their industry is so limited, that their workmen would find themselves much embarrassed, were they obliged to change the form of their dress, however troublesome it may be.

The habitations of the Moors are as simple as their dress: they inhabit only tents or huts, constructed with the branches of trees and reeds. A collection of several tents is called *douare*; there are some of them which contain ten, fifteen, twenty, and even above an hundred. These tents are placed circularly, in order that they may enclose their flocks in the middle during the night. If there be any vacant space between two tents, they fill it up with bushes and thorns, to exclude ferocious animals. The form of each tent is almost like that of a tomb, or of the keel of a vessel reversed, as Sallust says, when speaking of the habitations of the Numidians *. They are low,

* Cæterum adhuc ædificia Numidarum agrestium quæ Mappalia illi vocant oblonga incurvis lateribus tecta, quasi navium carinæ sunt. Sall. Bell. Jugur.

except those of their chiefs, which are extensive, and have a little more elevation. The cloth of which they are composed is of wool, very closely woven, and died either black or brown. The facility with which these habitations are transported makes the Moors often change their abode, according to the season, or as their wants may require. In winter they choose a southern exposure at the bottom of some hill; in summer they approach those places where there are plenty of pastures and abundance of springs.

An inventory of their furniture may soon be taken. They are acquainted with no other bed but the earth, upon which the most delicate spread a little straw, a mat, or a coarse carpet. A few earthen vessels for cooking, and to prepare their *courcouçon*, a wooden basin to draw water and to hold their milk, when they milk their cows, a goat's skin to churn butter, and two portable millstones to grind their corn, are all the apparatus of their kitchen.

You may readily suppose, after what I have said, that their repasts are neither sumptuous nor delicate. Indeed nothing can be more simple or frugal. They make only one meal a day that requires any preparation. Besides this they take nothing, or else they content themselves with

some fruit or a few wild roots. Those, however, who are in easy circumstances, eat two meals a day.

According to the principles of their religion, the Moors are obliged, both before and after meat, to wash their hands, beard, and mouth, but many neglect this ceremony. As Mahometans, they have nothing to drink but water, drawn up in a wooden basin, from which they all drink in their turn. However they do not refuse wine, when it is offered them, if they are not seen. I have even known many of them who drank to excess.

When the Moors undertake long journeys, and in places in which it is probable that they will meet with no hospitality, they carry with them a certain quantity of their meal, and when they are pressed by hunger, they make a few balls of it with water, in the hollow of their hand. This slight nourishment suffices, and supports them during very long courses.

POIRET.

CHAP.

CHAP. CXV.

OF THE POLITENESS AND CUSTOMS OF THE
MOORS.

I SIT down, with great pleasure, my dear friend, to give you that information which you require, respecting the politeness and customs of the Moors. I frequently wish for your company; your pencil would faithfully represent what my pen can paint but very imperfectly.

Though half savage in appearance, the Moors have certainly received signs to express friendship and respect—signs which, among them, have as little sincerity as among us. The most usual salutation, when the Moors meet, is to put the right hand on the breast and incline the head, and in this posture to wish one another a good day. They enquire afterwards concerning the health of their relations, naming them in order, and do not forget to ask respecting *the mare, the flock, the tent, &c.* If they are Moors who are acquainted, they embrace one another reciprocally, kissing each other's face and shoulders, or they only lay hold

of each other's hands and kiss one another. Those among whom an intimate familiarity subsists, when they meet one another, frequently do nothing but touch the extremity of each other's fingers, after which each puts his own to his mouth and kisses them.

When the Moors accost any person of dignified rank, such as a chief, a bey, or a kaide, they kiss their hand with great respect. A mark of favour, on the part of the great man, is to present the palm of his hand to the subjects who come to render him homage, and whom he wishes to distinguish from others: generally he presents only the back of his hand. In short, as a greater mark of submission, they kiss his head, his shoulders, his turban, and his clothes. There are some even who prostrate themselves, by placing one knee on the earth. A Moor never approaches a great man without pulling off his slippers.

When two Moors meet in the highway, they salute each other, and ask all those questions which I have mentioned above, without stopping, and even when pursuing their journey in different directions; so that it often happens that they are too far asunder to be understood when they have got to the end of their questions. This however does not prevent them from going on.

In

In conversation their gestures are lively, graceful, and expressive. When one studies them with attention, it is not difficult to comprehend the subject of their discourse. Their accent is strong and sharp, and the sound of their voice is sonorous, and may be heard very far. Their being habituated to live in the open fields, and to speak to one another at a great distance, makes them acquire, from infancy, a custom of speaking very loud. I remarked, that in cities their voice is much softer, and that their accent gives less offence to the ears.

The Moors do not affix to belching the same idea of rusticity and indelicacy as the Europeans. On the contrary, when any one belches, or sneezes, they offer up vows for his health. They say, *saba*, which signifies *may it do you good*. They employ this expression upon many other occasions. When any of them eats, drinks, or smokes, they say to him *saba*, an expression much juster than that used by us, when we drink one's health.

When the Moors are at rest, their usual position is not cross-legged like the Turks. They sit squatting, with their fusée upright between their knees; for they never quit their arms, except when in their tents. In this manner they pass whole days in doing nothing, and they con-

sider themselves as exceedingly happy when they can give themselves up entirely to idleness. I have the honour to be, &c.

POIRET.

CHAP. CXVI.

A BRIEF DETAIL OF GOVERNOR PHILLIP'S VOYAGE TO BOTANY BAY; WITH AN ACCOUNT OF THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE COLONIES AT PORT JACKSON, AND NORFOLK ISLAND.

THE fleet consisted of his majesty's ship *Sirius*, Commodore Phillip, and Captain John Hunter; the armed tender *Supply*, Lieutenant Ball, three store-ships, and six transports, carrying out six hundred male, and two hundred and fifty female convicts; and forty women, wives of the mariners, were permitted to accompany their husbands.

Having sailed from England, on the twentieth of May, 1787, we touched at the Canary Isles, where the governor, in imitation of Captain Cook, took precautions for preserving the health
of

of the convicts, and of the crews of the several ships.

During this passage, an attempt was made by the convicts, on board the Scarborough transport, to get possession of that ship; but being happily detected in time, the design was frustrated, and the ringleaders were sent on board the commodore's ship, where they were smartly punished, and then dispersed in other ships. This had so good an effect that no other attempt of the kind was made during the voyage.

By the report delivered in by the surgeons of the fleet, on the fourth of June, the day after we anchored in the Bay of Santa Cruz, in Teneriffe, it appeared that there were then nine marines and seventy-two convicts on the sick lists; and that twenty-one convicts, with three of their children had died since their first embarkation.

We made an unsuccessful attempt to anchor in the Bay of Porto Praya, in the island of St. Jago, one of the Cape Verdes, with a design to procure vegetables, which were scarce at Teneriffe. After this disappointment we crossed the torrid zone, and anchored in Rio de Janeiro on the sixth of August.

We lay here, taking on board water, live-stock, fruit, vegetables, and other provisions, till the

fourth of September; and our reception was very different from that of Captain Cook in 1768. This may be easily accounted for, by Commodore Phillip having been formerly in the service of the Portugueze, and known to the present governor of the place. This was a very fortunate circumstance, and perhaps saved the lives of many of the poor wretches on board.

We had a very expeditious and successful passage from Rio de Janeiro to the Cape of Good Hope. Our voyage from that place to Botany Bay, where we arrived on the eighteenth of January, 1788, was equally favourable.

CHAP. CXVII.

OF PORT JACKSON, AND THE INHABITANTS OF THE COUNTRY.

THE governor finding Botany Bay perfectly unfit for the settlement of his colony, both on account of the swamps and the want of proper anchorage for large vessels, failed to Port Jackson, which he found so spacious, that one thousand sail of the line might ride in perfect security. One of the coves in this harbour was pitched upon, which

which had the finest spring of water, and in which ships can anchor so close to the shore, that at a small expence quays may be constructed at which the largest vessels may unload.—In honour to Lord Sidney, the governor distinguished it by the name of *Sidney Cove*.

On the arrival of the boats, a party of the natives made its appearance near the place of landing. These were armed with lances, and at first were very vociferous; but gentle means used towards them (*the governor approaching with signs of friendship, alone and unarmed*) easily persuaded them to discard their suspicions, &c. One man in particular, who appeared to be the chief, shewed very singular marks, both of confidence in his new friends, and of determined resolution. Under the guidance of Governor Phillip, he went to a part of the beach, where the men belonging to the boats were then boiling their meat: when he approached the marines, who were drawn up near that place, and saw that by proceeding he should be separated from his companions, who remained with several of the officers at some distance, he stopped, and with great firmness seemed by words and gestures to threaten revenge if any advantage should be taken of his situation. He then went on with perfect calmness to examine what was

boiling in the pot, and by the manner in which he expressed his admiration, made it evident that he intended to profit by what he saw. Governor Phillip contrived to make him understand that large shells might conveniently be used for the same purpose.

In one of our excursions, when we landed in Broken Bay, several women came down to the beach with the men. It was now first observed by the governor, that the women in general had lost two joints from the little finger of the left hand. As these appeared to be all married women, he at first conjectured this privation to be a part of the marriage ceremony; but going afterwards into a hut, where were several women and children, he saw a girl of five or six years of age whose left hand was thus mutilated; and at the same time an old woman, and another who appeared to have had children, on both of whom all the fingers were perfect. The inhabitants of New South Wales have very few ornaments, except those which are impressed upon the skin itself, or laid on in the manner of paint. The men keep their beards short, it is thought, by scorching off the hair, and several of them, at the first arrival of our people, seemed to take great delight in being shaved. They sometimes hang in their
hair

hair the teeth of dogs, and other animals, the claws of lobsters, and several small bones, which they fasten there by means of gum; these have never been seen upon the women. Sometimes, indeed, they adorn themselves by plaistering their necks and bosoms with a sort of chalky white clay.

We find that though hitherto the natives have become very shy, since they found it was the intention of the Europeans to stay among them, they have been by no means hostile; except now and then to some of the straggling convicts, who have been regularly suspected of being the aggressors. Indeed such has been the prudent and humane, yet firm conduct of the governor, that both Great Britain and New Holland have the greatest reason to hope serious advantages from the establishment of the colony under his auspices. The colony at present, as also that under the deputed government of Lieutenant King at Norfolk Island, wears a promising appearance.

CHAP. CXVIII.

SOME ACCOUNT OF THE COUNTRY.

WE made several attempts to examine the country; but the obstacles were so many, and so great, that we could not penetrate many miles, before all the provisions which we could carry were exhausted. The coast is lined in those parts, at least in the neighbourhood of our settlement, with a kind of impenetrable forest, formed by large trees, interwoven together by the creeping plant usually called a supple jack: but, farther inland, we found the country more open, with pleasing prospects, and the soil excellent. In one of our excursions, we saw, for the first time, one of those black swans, which were mentioned by Dampier, in his voyage to this country. It is a noble bird, larger than a common swan, and equally beautiful in form. On being shot at, it rose, and discovered that its wings were edged with white. Its bill is tinged with red.

We discovered a few huts in the inland parts, consisting of single pieces of bark, about eleven
feet

feet in length, and from four to six in breadth, bent in the middle while fresh from the tree, and set up so as to form an acute angle, not a little resembling cards set up by children.

It was conjectured that the chief use of these imperfect structures might be, to conceal them from the animals for which they must frequently be obliged to lie in wait. The bark of many trees was observed to be cut into notches, as if for the purpose of climbing; and in several there were holes, apparently the retreat of some animal, but enlarged by the natives for the purpose of catching the inhabitant.

CHAP. CXIX.

THE NATIVES HAVE SOME IDEA OF SCULPTURE.

IT is a circumstance singular enough, that the natives, though in so rude and uncivilized a state, as not even to have made any attempt towards cloathing themselves, notwithstanding that at times they evidently suffer much from the cold and wet, are not without notions of sculpture. In all the excursions of Governor Phillip, and in the neighbourhood

neighbourhood of Botany Bay and Port Jackson, the figures of animals, shields, and weapons, and even of men, have been seen carved upon the rocks, roughly indeed, but sufficiently well fully to ascertain what was the object intended. Fish are often represented, and in one place the form of a large lizard was sketched out with tolerable accuracy. On the top of one of the hills, the figure of a man, in the attitude usually assumed by them when they begin to dance, was executed in a still superior style.

CHAP. CXX.

OF NORFOLK ISLAND; WITH AN ACCOUNT OF THE EXECUTION OF ONE OF THE CONVICTS.

ON the nineteenth of March, 1788, Lieutenant Ball arrived from Norfolk Island, after landing Lieutenant King, his colony, stores, and provisions, with some difficulty, on account of the want of a convenient landing-place.

Every thing said by its discoverer Captain Cook, with regard to the beauty and romantic situation of this enchanting island, we found to be true.

The

The descriptions of Tinian, and Juan Fernandez, in Lord Anson's voyage, are entirely applicable to this delightful little spot. "If I were disposed to turn hermit," said one who landed on it, after his return to England, "I do not know a place to which I should have been so much disposed to retire as to *Norfolk Island*, before it was made a *den of thieves*."

Soon after this, the first criminal court was held, which it was found necessary to hold in the new settlement. At this court, six convicts received sentence of death for pursuing their old trade; three of them without even the possibility of a temptation to commit the crimes of which they were *now* convicted. So inveterate were their habits of dishonesty! One, who appeared to be at the head of the gang, was executed immediately; another, seemingly less culpable than the rest, was pardoned; and the other four were banished to a small island, where they were allowed only bread and water.

C H A P. CXXI.

WHEAT AND BARLEY ARE SOWN;—SOME OF
THEIR CATTLE STRAY;—THE SURGEON'S
RETURN OF THE DEAD AND SICK.

IN the month of May, eight or ten acres were sown with wheat and barley, beside what had been sown by the officers and individuals on their own account.

On the sixth of this month, the *Lady Penrhyn*, Captain Sever, the *Charlotte*, Captain Gilbert, and the *Scarborough*, Captain Marshall, left Port Jackson, and proceeded on their voyage to China; and, about the same time, the *Supply*, Lieutenant Ball, sailed for Lord Howe's Island (which had been discovered by the same ship in her voyage to Norfolk Island) in hopes of procuring some turtle, to check the progress of the scurvy, with which the people were still so much affected, that near two hundred men were incapable of work.

On the twenty-fifth, the *Supply* returned from Lord Howe's Island, unfortunately without a single turtle; from which we concluded that
those

those animals resort there only in summer, many being seen when the island was discovered in February.

In this month, three of the convicts were killed by the natives, and one much wounded in the back. There were reasons to suppose that the former were the aggressors.

About the beginning of June, the settlement suffered a great loss. Two bulls and four cows strayed, being neglected by the man who attended them, and were never seen afterward.

In June, two more of the convicts were tried and executed.

By the surgeon's return, on the thirtieth of this month, it appeared, that one marine, one woman and one of the children, died on the voyage; that three marines, and two children, had died since we landed; and that thirty marines, and six women and children, were then on the sick list: also, that thirty-six male, and four female convicts, and five children, died on the passage; twenty male, eight female, and eight children, had died since we landed; and that sixty-six were then under medical treatment.

CH A P. CXXII.

OF THE FIRST ACT OF DEPREDACTION MADE
BY THE NATIVES.

IN the month of June, the first act of unprovoked depredation was committed by the natives. While our people were fishing, they came down to the place in a considerable body, most of them with their spears poised, ready to throw, if our people had made any resistance, and stood in this posture, while others seized and carried off the greatest part of the fish. The governor supposes they were driven to this by necessity, as provisions of all kinds, and particularly fish, which makes a principal part of their food, are very scarce in the winter season.

In July, the governor made another expedition to examine the country between Port Jackson and Broken Bay; and found the land, in general, good, and fit for cultivation. In this excursion, we had interviews with many of the natives, which all ended peaceably: but we had fresh instances of their distress for food, and of their shyness and dislike to their new neighbours.

On

On the second of October, the *Sirius* sailed for the Cape of Good Hope, to purchase grain for seed, flour, and other necessaries. At this time, the officers had all separate houses, and the whole detachment was comfortably lodged.

CHAP. CXXIII.

OF THE CLIMATE AND SOIL AT SIDNEY COVE.

A Town is intended to be built at Sidney Cove, the principal street of which will be two hundred feet wide. Materials for building are plentiful, except lime, and good of their kind; but no substitute for lime has yet been found.

The climate of this cove is considered as equal to the finest in Europe. The rains are never of long duration; and there are seldom any fogs. The soil, though generally light, and rather sandy, is full as good as is usually found so near the sea-coast. All the plants and fruit-trees, which were brought undamaged from Brazil and the Cape, thrive exceedingly; and vegetables, when the last accounts came away, were become plentiful.

tiful. There were fine melons and cauliflowers in the governor's garden ; orange-trees flourish, and the fig-trees and vines improve still more rapidly.

CHAP. CXXIV.

OF THE DISCOVERIES OF LIEUTENANT SHORT-
LAND, WHO RETURNED FROM BOTANY BAY
* TO ENGLAND BY THE WAY OF BATAVIA.

HAVING left the governor at the new settlement, we sailed on the fourteenth of July, 1788, in the *Alexander* transport, in company with the *Prince of Wales*, *Borrowdale*, and *Friendship*; from all but the last of which we were soon separated. We fell in with several small islands, and had some interviews with the inhabitants from their canoes. These were well constructed, and the appearance of the men seemed to bespeak the fertility of their country. September the eleventh, the scurvy raging very dreadfully, we bore away to a small island not seen before. Many cocoa-palms were seen on the shore, and excited an earnest

ex-

expectation of procuring effectual refreshment for the sick. A boat from each of the ships was therefore manned and sent out. While the boats were sounding a-head, many Indians approached in their canoes, and by signs invited our people to shore; but when they attempted to land at a place which had the appearance of a morai or burying-place, they would not suffer it, insisting that they should proceed further one way or the other. In the mean time many persons of both sexes swam off from the shore, holding up bamboos (the only water-vessels in the Pelew Islands) full of water. Mr. Sinclair, the master of the *Alexander*, who was in the boat, finding he could not make them understand that he wanted cocoa-nuts, not water, landed as soon as he could find a convenient place. I immediately (says he) fixed upon an old man, whom, from an ornament of bone upon his arm, I concluded to be a chief, and made him a present of some nails and beads, which were accepted with evident pleasure, and immediately conciliated his friendship. This was a most fortunate step, as he afterwards often shewed his authority by checking the most insolent of his people when they pressed forward, and endeavoured to steal whatever they could seize.—Mr. S. could obtain but thirty cocoa-nuts, and those green.—These
islanders

islanders were well-limbed men, moderately tall, with long hair: many of them chewed the betel-nut, and these were all furnished with a small hollow stick, apparently of ebony, out of which they struck a kind of powder like lime.

Their arms were a lance and a kind of adze hung over the shoulder, some men carrying one and others two. These adzes were of iron, and evidently of European manufacture. In return for my presents, the old chief gave one to me, which was not equally acceptable: it was a mixture of fish, yams, and many other things, the odour of which, probably from the staleness of the composition, was very far from being agreeable. When we first landed, many of the natives repeated the word *Englees*, as if to enquire whether we were of that nation; but when they understood that we were, they shook their heads and said, *Espaniol*; possibly, therefore, the discovery of our nation might prevent them from being as courteous on shore as they had been in their canoes. This island might perhaps be *Artingall*, where our countrymen had distinguished themselves five years before by the assistance they gave to a hostile state.

The scurvy increased to so dreadful a degree that the *Friendship* was obliged to be cleared and sunk;
and

and even when the two crews were put together, officers included, there were left only sixteen men and two boys in health, and ten men and a boy sick. And so dreadfully did the devastation continue, that, had the *Alexander* been a very few days sail more distant from Batavia, she must have been lost merely from inability to conduct her into port, as every man on board must have been totally disabled. On the seventeenth of November only one man was fit for work, besides the officers; a very little longer continuance would have reduced her to the condition of floating at the mercy of the winds and waves. At six that evening, the wind being too scanty to carry her into the roads of Batavia, an effort was made by all indiscriminately, who were able to work, and anchor was cast between the islands of Leyden and Alkmara; soon after a gun was fired, and a signal made for assistance. At two in the afternoon, on the eighteenth, as no assistance arrived, the still greater effort of weighing anchor was tried, and the task performed with the utmost difficulty.

CHAP. CXXV.

LIEUTENANT WATTS'S NARRATIVE OF THE
RETURN OF THE LADY PENRHYN TRANS-
PORT FROM PORT JACKSON, BY THE WAY
OF OTAHEITE, TO CANTON.

HAVING arrived at the Society Isles in July, 1788, we found that Omai had been dead some years, and also the two New-Zealand boys which Captain Cook had left with him. Mahune, the chief of Eimeo, in revenge for the damage which Captain Cook had done him, had attacked Otoo, and killed all the cattle which the Captain had left there.

We found Otoo still living, and as friendly as ever; and also Oediddee, who accompanied Captain Cook in one trip to the southward; and who had neither lost his regard for the English, nor his remembrance of a single place where he had been with them.

The natives seemed all glad to see our people, and flocked round the ship, crying out, "*Tayo, Tayo,*" which signifies *friend*; and "*Patri, no Tutti,*"

Tutti," Cook's ship; bringing great quantities of cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, plantains and taro, and Otaheite apples. The affectionate manner in which they enquired after Captain Cook, conspired, with several other circumstances, to make the interview delightfully affecting. The circumstances of Omai's death were related by several persons, in which they all pretty well agreed. The account given by Tutti, a chief of Owarr-hee is as follows :

After Omai had got perfectly settled, he found himself under the necessity of purchasing a great quantity of cloth, and other necessaries for himself and family, of which his neighbours took advantage, and made him pay extravagantly for every article he purchased. He frequently visited Ulitea, and never went empty-handed, so that by these means he expended much of his treasure. He died at his own house, as did the New-Zealand boys, but in what order their deaths had happened, Tutti could not give any information. But, upon Omai's decease, the Ulitea men came over and attacked them for his property, alledging that, as he was a native of their island, they had an undoubted right to it. Tutti said they carried away a considerable part of his remaining property, and particularly his musquets, the stocks

of which they broke, and took the powder and buried it in the sand. He added, that the conflict had been very fierce, and that great numbers were slain on both sides, nor were they friends even at this time. The house that Captain Cook had built for Omai was still in being, and was covered by a very large one built in the country fashion; it was taken possession of by the chief of the island. With respect to the horses, the mare had foaled, but died soon afterwards, as did the foal. The horse was still living, though of no benefit. Thus were rendered fruitless the benevolent intentions of his Majesty, and all the pains and trouble Captain Cook had been at in preserving the cattle during a tedious passage to these islands.

Otoo was very desirous to have more horses brought to him; but what was most remarkable, was the tender veneration with which he evidently regards Captain Cook, whose picture he carries constantly about with him, never suffering it to be out of his sight. They did not inform him of the fate of this valuable character; and indeed it is evident that the recital would have shocked him very much. When they were going, Oedid-dee regretted their departure exceedingly, and importuned the Captain very much to take him to Ulitea, but Otoo (whatever were his reasons)

begged that he might by no means be taken from Otaheite ; the Captain promised he should not, and taking leave of Oediddee, put him into his canoe ; on which he shed tears in abundance, said he was very unhappy, and when he put from the ship, never once turned to look at her.

CHAP. CXXVI.

CAPTAIN MARSHALL'S ACCOUNT OF THE PASSAGE OF THE SCARBOROUGH TRANSPORT, IN COMPANY WITH THE CHARLOTTE, CAPTAIN GILBERT, FROM PORT JASCKON TO CANTON, BY THE WAY OF TINIAN.

WE sailed from Port Jackson in the beginning of May, 1787, got some refreshment at Lord Howe's Island, and passing within sight of Norfolk Island, steered thence almost due north, and passed the equator in about one hundred and seventy-four degrees of east longitude, on the eighteenth of June.

On the thirty-first of July we made the Ladrone Isles; and on the fourth of August anchored on

the south-west side of Tinian. We landed our sick instantly, having fifteen quite disabled, and the rest so weak that they could scarcely work the ship; and it is remarkable, though they were on shore only three or four days, being blown off from the bank on the eighth, that they were so much relieved by it as to remain very well till our arrival at Canton, on the eighth of September.

During the passage, a number of small islands were discovered; with the inhabitants of which, as their shyness was not to be conquered by their curiosity, little or no intercourse was had; so that all we have learned of some of the tribes, is, that they were cloathed in skins, and ornamented their hair with shells.

The sum total of information obtained about others, is as follows: If we may judge of these people from the construction of their canoes, they certainly possess a considerable share of contrivance and ingenuity; many of them are large enough to contain sixteen or twenty people; they are narrow, and built to sail very fast, yet there is not the least danger of oversetting, as they are steadied with an out-rigger, resembling a ladder, on the weather-side, to one end of which a log of wood is fastened, cut sharp at each end in the form of a boat; this not only serves to keep the
canoe

canoe upright, but likewise holds her to windward. At the other end of the out-rigger, a stout rope is fixed, which leads up to the mast-head, and serves as a shroud; and when the wind blows fresh, two or more men, according to the size of the canoe, go out upon the ladder to keep her upright. Though these canoes always sail on the same side, yet they are so contrived as to sail one way as well as the other, and the Indians manage them with such dexterity, that they are put about much sooner than our boats. Every canoe has a sail, which is in general very large; they appear to be made of raw silk neatly sewed together, and are cut in the form of our shoulder of mutton sail, with a yard at the fore-leach, and another at the foot, so that when they want to put their canoe about, they have only to shift their tack and bring it to the leeward of the mast: in short, from what little we saw of these people, they appeared to be lively, ingenious, and expert.

The work concludes with a list of the convicts sent to New South Wales in 1787, the date of their conviction, and the term of years for which they were sentenced. It is remarkable, that there are very few women from any place but London.

CHAP. CXXVII.

OF A PARTICULAR KIND OF SHARK, MET
WITH IN PORT JACKSON, BY LIEUTENANT
WATTS, AND THENCE NAMED WATTS'S
SHARK.

THIS species has hitherto escaped the researches of the Ichthyologist. The head is broad, and angular in shape; but the body rounded, and nearly equal in dimensions for above half the length, when it suddenly grows very small, and so continues to the end of the tail: the colour of the body is brown in different shades, and there are three rows of large pale spots, of an irregular shape, most of them dark within; one row passes down the middle, and the other on each side; besides which there are others below them less conspicuous. The mouth is placed nearer the end of the head than in most of the genus, and furnished in the front with nine sharp crooked teeth, in three rows, and a great number of small ones on each side. The eyes project considerably above the rest of the head, and are placed on the
upper

upper part of it; the space between is hollowed or sunk in: at the most forward part of the head are two cartilaginous appendages, jagged at the end, with four others, nearly similar, on each side, between the first and the breathing holes: the *pectoral* fins are placed beneath these last; the *abdominal* about the middle of the body; and the *anal* more than half way between the last and the tail; besides which, the under part is finned from that part to the end: on the upper part of the back are two fins, both placed uncommonly far back. This fish is supposed to be full as voracious as any of the genus, in proportion to its size; for after having lain on the deck for two hours, seemingly quiet, a dog passing by, the shark sprung upon it with all the ferocity imaginable, and seized it by the leg; nor could the dog disengage himself without assistance.

C H A P. CXXVIII.

OF THE DOG OF NEW SOUTH WALES.

THE height of this species standing erect is rather less than two feet: the length two feet and

a half. The head is formed much like that of a fox, the ears short and erect, with whiskers from one to two inches in length on the muzzle. The general colour of the upper part is pale brown, growing lighter towards the belly: the hind part of the fore legs, and the fore part of the hind ones, white, as are the feet of both: the tail is of a moderate length, somewhat bushy, but in a less degree than that of the fox: the teeth are much the same as usual in the genus.

The female, from whom this description is particularly taken, is now alive in the possession of the *Marchioness of Salisbury*, at *Hatfield House*, and was sent over as a present for Mr. Nepean, from Governor Phillip. It laps like other dogs, and has much of the manners of the dog, but is of a very savage nature, and not likely to change in that particular. It neither barks nor growls when vexed or teased; instead of which, it erects the hair of the whole body like bristles, and seems very furious: it is very eager after its prey, and is very fond of rabbits and chickens, raw, but will not touch dressed meat. From its fierceness and agility, it has the advantage over other animals much superior in size; for a very fine French fox-dog being put to it, in a moment it seized him by the loins, and would soon have put an end to

to his existence, had not help been at hand. With the utmost ease, it is able to leap over an ass's back, and was very near worrying one to death, having fastened upon him, so that the creature was not able to disengage himself without assistance; it has also been known to run down both deer and sheep. A second of these is in the possession of Mr. Lascelles, agreeing with this with respect to ferocity; whence it is scarcely to be expected that this elegant animal will ever become familiar.

CHAP. CXXIX.

ON THE DRESS OF THE INHABITANTS OF
DIEPPE IN FRANCE, AND OUR AUTHOR'S
PASSAGE TO CHERBOURG, A. D. 1788.

NOTHING can be more ridiculous to an English eye, nor, one would think, to the eye of common sense, than the dress of the people of this place. Every rank, age and sex, with their hair dressed, powdered, and toupee'd, from a child of six to a man or woman of sixty. Sailors, friseurs, and gentlemen, all dressed without distinction.

tion. The habits of the women are still more curious and disgusting than those of the men. They go without hats; the lappets of their ugly caps flying about their ears, and their petticoats scarcely reaching to their knees. Their ideas of delicacy seem to be totally different from those of their sex on our side of the water.

Our passage from Dieppe to Cherbourg was very uncomfortable. I had to spend two nights and a day on board a miserable sloop, with only the captain, two sailors and a boy; whose faces I had never before seen, and whose jargon I could with difficulty understand. I lay down in my clothes, upon the bed, which was partitioned out of a cabin, scarce large enough to hold the crew; and was almost suffocated with the offensive smell that issued from it.—My attempts to sleep were constantly interrupted by the salutations of the fleas; who, claiming the territory as sacred to themselves, sufficiently punished me for my intrusion. I felt them repeatedly making the grand tour of my body, leaving many marks of their excursions upon its different parts and promontories;—both on the peninsula of my face, the isthmus of my neck, and the more continental parts of my back and shoulders. We had not been long out at sea, when the captain descended.

I observed

I observed him strike a light, which he was a long while bringing into existence; when, lighting a candle, he reached with it over my bed as far as he could; in order, as I concluded, to discover if the vessel leaked. He did the same on the other side, and immediately muttered some oaths. I found my apprehensions beginning to awake—when, suddenly, the noise of the pump from above, and the quantity of water running off the deck, so much alarmed me, as to make me jump out of my bed and run up stairs. I there learned that the vessel leaked; but could not satisfy myself with respect to the danger. I went down again into the cabin, and was disturbed every quarter of an hour with the working of the pump. I was heartily glad to welcome the morning light; and arose from my bed at its earliest peep, more tired than refreshed.

We arrived at Carentan about nine o'clock in the evening. As the diligence did not stop for supper, I made the best of my way to a miserable *cauberg*, with two fellow passengers, who were Frenchmen. We enquired for meat, for butter, and for cheese—in vain. All we could procure was dry bread. The *cuisinier* was busy frying pancakes in a corner, which I petitioned most strongly to partake of. His refusal the more heightened

heightened my desire ; but intreaty, promises, and every temptation was fruitless, as it was all they could procure for some guests who were to sup in an adjoining room. The politeness of my fellow-travellers was satisfied at the excuse ; but on my attempting to lay hold of one of the pancakes, the *cuisinier* removed the dish to the farther end of the kitchen.

There are certain occasions when a man is so much bent upon the acquisition of a trifle, as to subject himself to the most serious consequences, rather than be disappointed. Such was the present ; and had all the *cuisiniers* in France (of whom by the bye there is a tolerable number) been present, I should have enjoyed the bustle.

I at first made proposals to my fellow-travellers to make an open attack upon the pancakes, and to carry them off in triumph, by force of arms ; but they shuddered at the incivility of the thought. I then drew backwards by degrees, and watching an opportunity, took out my fork, and stuck it through the pancakes. At once all was confusion. The master, the mistress, the *fille de chambre*, the *cuisinier*—all ran to seize me. I flew round the kitchen, taking care to keep aloof till I had devoured my prey : and never did I eat any thing with greater *gout*. All the *diabes*, and
every

every oath that French ingenuity and nonsense could invent, were poured upon me, and I was at last forced to make my escape to the coach, laughing most heartily at the situation I had left them in.

I know that this adventure cannot be excused, on the ground of civility or justice; but such considerations are seldom operative, when we are disposed for what an Englishman would justify by the name of *fun*.

CH A P. CXXX.

A SINGULAR CHARACTER.

CAËN is thirty-one leagues from Cherbourg. It is the second city in Normandy. The prospect of it on entering is very pleasant, but the country around by no means luxuriant. I was much surprised, about a mile from Caën, at meeting a lady finely dressed, riding astride upon an ass, with a servant on foot following her. We reached Caën about eleven o'clock: I went to the *Hotel d'Angleterre*, where I found several English families; and having delivered a letter of recommendation,

mendation, and engaged myself to dinner, I walked out to take a survey of the town.

I visited the celebrated *Abbate*, founded by William the Conqueror; it is a very fine edifice, and kept in wonderful good order. About the middle of the altar (which, with the choir, is all of marble) is the monument of King William, who was here interred.

I dined, according to my engagement, with the gentleman to whom I had procured a letter; and was much pleased at meeting with an Englishman, who lived with him. He was an old gentleman of family and fortune, from Devonshire, and had formed an attachment to this Frenchman, to whom he was about to leave his fortune. I there found an instance of one of these extraordinary propensities of human nature, that seemed to run counter to truth and probability. This old gentleman, who had been born in the soil of freedom, and had participated in all the advantages of civilization, elegance, and taste, that characterize our happy isle, had conceived a strong partiality for France. He could say nothing that was favourable to England; and so assiduous was he in discovering all the errors and blemishes in the manners, laws, climate, and constitution of our country, that, at the view he gave of it, our
situation

situation was truly deplorable—our liberty was only a chimera; our laws were unequal and absurd; our manners rude and unpolished; our policy defective; and our religion heretical. So nicely had he sifted through the grate of prejudice, every circumstance relative to England, that its beauties were all lost and overlooked, and its defects alone preserved. These were presented to the view of his French companions, who conceiving them to be the essence of English manners, blessed themselves (Heavens bless them!) that they were Frenchmen.

On leaving Caën, we soon commenced a conversation, and I found myself in company with characters rather different. An old man, who never wandered far beyond the precincts of his native town; one of a middle age, who had been great part of his time in Italy, and talked the language well; and a young puppy, who was dressed to the utmost extreme of French frippery.

On enquiring the hour, as soon as the morning opened, the youth drew out a watch, by the appendage of a long and brilliant chain; but appearing not satisfied with its decision, he drew forth another from his other side, of equal richness, with a long equipage of gold seals and trinkets. I lifted up my eyes, and could not help lamenting
how

how soon conveniency and use are distorted into extravagance and folly. The woman who made the fourth passenger, was old and talkative, and making only remarks that were frivolous and trifling, and comments that were anticipated and obvious, would frequently interrupt a conversation more agreeable. The politeness of the men obliged them to break off a discourse, however interesting, when addressed by a female, however insignificant. We rode through continued and pleasant rows of trees, till we reached Lisieux, where we dined.

Normandy is divided into seven bishoprics; namely, Bayeux, Coutances, Lisieux, Evreux, Seez, Avranches, and Rouën. It contains seven bailliages, four in the Upper, and three in the Lower Normandy, as follow: Rouën, Evreux, Caux, Gifori; Caën, Alençon, and Coutance.

On returning to the inn, I resumed my seat, and partook of a desert; when presently a berlin drove into the yard, and two tall ill-looking fellows instantly leaped out, with swords in their hands. At once all was mute attention. Every one knew besides myself, of what description they were. The door opened, and they entered our room. In such a country as this, every one has
reason

reason to tremble for his safety. Consternation seized upon the looks of the whole company; each trait of vivacity was fled; fear, horror, and expectation hung upon every brow; each, though unknowing of a cause, fearing for himself; I instantly caught the tremor, and felt myself a good deal alarmed, when one of them fixed his haggard looks intent upon me: (I supposed afterwards from seeing me to be a foreigner). Presently they seized on the youth I before spoke of, and commanded him to surrender every thing he had. Guilt blushed in his face, and consciousness seemed to take away every power of defence, or of excuse, and he begged alone for mercy. They took possession of his gold watches, his money, and every thing about him, and calling for the *conducteur*, drew a parcel from the coach, containing cash to the amount of two hundred pounds. This the wretch had that morning stolen from his father, and was making off for Paris.—The *chasseurs* were dispatched after him, and the process now was pretty summary.—They secured him and took him away—God knows whither.

A little disconcerted at this adventure, we again proceeded forwards; but the variety of objects, and the revolution of ideas incident thereon, soon removed the impression. As for the Frenchmen,
they

they resumed at once their cheerfulness, and forgot all pity or detestation towards their former companion, in expressions of gallantry, pleasantry and politeness.

CHAP. CXXXI.

OF THE PALACE OF THE THUILLERIES, THE BASTILE, AND THE FRENCH KING'S LIBRARY.

EVERY spot as we approached the capital became more and more interesting; we saw a vast number of chateaus; some elevated high above us, some at a distance by the side of the river, and others standing in little islands incircled with groves of poplars.

At length we reached St. Germain's, which is the Windsor of Paris. In point of prospect the comparison may possibly hold; but the town is most miserably inferior. We passed the palace and gardens, but could have no tolerable view of them.

I could not but look with indignation upon a place that served as a sanctuary for an English monarch,

monarch, who, both throughout his reign and his exile, was a dependent on the French crown. It was here that James the First retreated, in the year 1690, after the glorious battle of the Boyne, and ever afterwards held his servile court.

We passed the famous engine at Marli, invented for the purpose of supplying the king's gardens at Versailles and Marli with water, which is taken from the Seine, to the height of six hundred feet, and carried to the distance of six miles.

On approaching Paris, we met with a number of ill-shapen monsters, ycleped carriages, driving out for an evening's ride. They are constructed of every possible uncouth and awkward shape, and were charmingly contrasted with an English carriage or two that I had the pleasure of meeting. I was much struck at the environs, and the entrance of Paris; it was far superior to any thing I had a conception of. The scene was truly beautiful. An immense length of road, with rows of trees, and houses on each side, was terminated, at the point of a rising hill, by two handsome barriers, which formed a striking *coup d'œil*. After passing them, we entered the Champs Elisées, that seemed very rightly so named. Avenues opened on either side of the road, and vistas of young trees were filled in every part with company.

pany. Some were regaling themselves at tables beneath the trees ; others, under open tents ; and farther in were parties walking. Ladies were parading along in full dress, with their fans in their hands ; and gentlemen walking by their sides, with their hats beneath their arms. In short, every part was crowded ; and the road was equally filled with a vast diversity of carriages, of the most fanciful and tawdry appearances, some of which were gilt all over. So new a scene made me lose almost every idea of reality, and I fancied it to be enchantment, or at least that I was in China, or some remote country ; our ideas of which approach towards it, as being wholly different from any thing we have ever been accustomed to.

In the evening I went to the grand opera, and was very much entertained. The form of the building is very handsome ; and, considering the shortness of the space in which it was erected, is much to be admired. It was built in six weeks after the former opera was burnt down, which unhappily destroyed many of the finest dresses and decorations.

This fatal conflagration, at the time, occasioned a general horror and despondency throughout the whole city. They tell of a circumstance, so truly descriptive of the characteristics of the French levity and frivolity, that I cannot avoid relating it.

Whilst

Whilst the remains of the decorations and scenery were carrying away in waggons from the ruins of the building, the whole city were assembled around, and followed the carriages, in a procession similar to the funeral of the most lamented monarch, whilst dejection hung upon every countenance, and every tongue uttered lamentations. A common fellow, who was riding upon one of the carriages, picked out, from the heap of ruins on which he was sitting, the habiliments of an opera prince, and, decking himself with the richest ornaments he could find, rode along with the state of a Rinaldo. As soon as this humorous feat attracted the eye of the people, the look of dejection, and the cry of sorrow, were changed in a moment, and succeeded by the most excessive peals of laughter.

The palace of the Thuilleries (so named from having been built on a spot formerly over-run with reeds and marshes) adjoins to the grand gallery of the Louvre. The palace is very superb, and the statues dispersed about the gardens, exquisite. The *chef d'œuvres* of Le Pautre, and the beautiful productions of Bouchardon, are here collected. The statue of Æneas carrying his father from Troy, is finely executed; and the charming piece of Arria and Petus surpasses the power of description.

tion. I was so rapt in admiration, that I wanted new powers of expression. The look and attitude of Petus, as he views his wife stabbing herself, to teach him how to die, is such as the most impassioned and expressive actor would find it hard to imitate. Life, thought, passion, and horror, are thrown into the piece; and the calmness and resignation of Arria—"It is not painful, Petus!" is beautifully contrasted.

To a person who has been much in the habit of being abroad, the mode of keeping the Sunday, in England, must have a great appearance of reserve and of austerity; nor could such a one well reconcile himself to that total metamorphosis which is then required. The observance would be tedious, and the restraint intolerable. In France, the duties of the day cease with those of the church; and between the intervals of mass, the vacancy is most frequently filled with cards. Devotion is here of so portable and so accommodating a nature, that it may with equal ease, and at any time, be laid down or resumed; and after all the ardor of religion, and the envelopement of themselves in zeal and mystery, a transition may at once be made to levity, and the most trifling amusements. The afternoons are universally spent in pleasure; and the opera, and the

the French and Italian comedies for the polite, and the *petites theatres* for the *bourgeois*, serve to make up for the interruption and constraint of the morning. Although the calls upon the people to religious duties are frequent, in Roman-catholic countries, they are not tiresome; their frequency is rendered palatable, by their toleration of, and their coalition with, the different amusements. Fairs are generally held in celebration of some saint on Sundays, and standings always placed at the church doors.

I have taken a view of the *Jardin du Roi*, which is laid out to the admiration of the French. The chief beauty of it is the botanical collection, arranged according to species. On the top of a circular mount in the garden, which you ascend by a winding walk, is a small temple, that commands an extensive view of Paris and its environs. This spot is likewise polluted, in being dedicated to adulation and to vanity.

From the *Jardin du Roi* we crossed the Seine in a boat, and walked through the arsenal, at the end of which was the Bastile.

As I looked upon the gloomy walls, my soul shuddered within me. I beheld that terrific engine of arbitrary power, with horror and detestation. I feared to tread upon the ground that

encircled it: all was horrible and dreary. Accursed mansion! I exclaimed; thou hast been the dungeon and the tomb of many, whose breasts have burned with the sacred love of liberty, and whose hearts have been warmed with the holy flame of virtue! Would that I were an enchanter, that thy ghastly walls might tumble to the ground!

A deep fosse surrounds it, with high walls, that mock every idea of escape. The approach to it is defended by draw-bridges, and secured by gates, which shut one within the other. They guard it with so much watchfulness and jealousy, that you dare not approach to look at it. The deputies from Brittany were then airing themselves upon the ramparts. I turned with disgust from the place.

The king's library was lately open; an opportunity I did not miss of embracing. It comprises two hundred thousand printed volumes, beside six thousand manuscripts; and is esteemed the first in Europe. The books are contained in six large saloons, in one of which are two immense globes, constructed by Coronelli. They stand in a hall below, and, through two large apertures, reach into the room above, from whence observations are to be made. Their diameter is eleven feet eleven inches. The circles for the meridian and horizon were

were made by an Englishman, and are eighteen feet in diameter.

The amusements here are much better conducted than in England. They are not so long in duration, and terminate at a more early hour; so as to leave time for a continuation of society after supper, without a sacrifice of the health and spirits. The decorum and good order that is preserved in the public places, would likewise be very desirable, were it not for the idea that "those vile guns," and horrible Swiss guards, stuck up in every corner, were the means of it. I should, on no account, ever wish to see the soldiery preside over, or interfere in, the amusements of Englishmen.

C H A P. CXXXII.

THE HISTORY OF A NUN.

THE characteristics of all the public works in this country, are grandeur and expence; nothing is left unattempted, that is within the grasp of possibility. Neither labour nor profusion are regarded; and oftentimes the immensity of their designs

outsteps the means of execution ; as there are many things here, remaining monuments of the greatness of human ambition, and the weakness of human ability.

In the afternoon, I was taken to the chapel of the Convent of Saint Sacrament, to attend a sermon from a famous predicateur ; but chiefly to hear a nun, celebrated for her vocal powers, sing the service.

Mademoiselle de ——— was a young lady of high connections, and large fortune ; endowed with every accomplishment that can adorn the fairest work of nature, and possessed of charms, both of person, mind, and disposition, that attracted the love, the envy, and the admiration of the world. So rich a prize was looked at with a longing eye by the church. Accomplishments such as these, destined to enrich society, and benefit mankind, were to be vested in solitude and prison, and devoted, falsely devoted, to the service of God. To this end, arts and persuasions were eagerly and insidiously made use of : temptations were held forth with fascinating lustre ; and a false and glaring picture of visionary joys presented to her view. Her susceptible and warm mind was prevailed upon ; and, allured by the charms of zeal and superstition, and elevated at the idea of heaven,

heaven, and eternal happiness, she consented to rob the world of what was its due, and to appropriate to religion what could alone be serviceable to society. Nature, in vain had lavished on her the beauties of person, and the blessings of capacity—care and attention had in vain assisted and improved them. The expectation of friends, and the claims of the world, were alike disappointed; and a lovely image of perfection was thus, as it were, annihilated. Such is the tale.

She sang the service, with a voice and powers that would have enraptured many an enamoured circle; now only destined to re-echo through the dreary walls of a convent, or lull some senseless monk from a state of apathy to that of slumber. The chapel was too confined for her voice, which would have filled twice the space. I had a glimpse of her through the grate, as she was kneeling with others of her sister-hood. Seclusion and confinement had wasted away the bloom from her cheeks; and her fallow looks were rendered the more interesting, by the still beautiful black eyes that overhung them. O Superstition! how much hast thou to answer for, for thy many inroads upon Nature! I sighed as I looked upon her, and wished for once that I had been a pope.

I went to the church of the Carmelites, in the Fauxbourg de St. Jaques, which is one of the richest repositories, and contains some of the choicest valuables in all Paris. The floor of the church throughout is marble, and the altar-piece very elegant, being a tabernacle of entire silver; but its chief beauties are the paintings. The admirable piece of Guido, of the Annunciation, which stands at the right of the altar, is wonderfully soft and beautiful; and that celebrated production, the *chef d'œuvre* of Le Brun, representing a penitent Magdalen, is beyond description interesting and expressive; her eyes seem to be newly swoln with tears; and it is impossible to look at her, for many minutes, without feeling sympathetic emotions. The face was taken from that of the celebrated Comtesse de Villaire, who, in an hour of penitence and remorse, flew from the world to this convent, and made an eternal solitude an atonement for the lawless love of a monarch.

CHAP. CXXXIII.

OF ROUSSEAU.

WE arrived at Ermenonville, and alighted at a small inn in the middle of the village ; which was beautifully reclusive and pleasant : at a distance from the rest of the world, it seemed to exist here solely to itself. Such a village, thought I, (as I entered it) was made for Rousseau ; here he enjoyed the charms of that rural, and that simple, state he loved.

The *wife* of Rousseau, I am sorry to be informed, cohabits with a worthless fellow of a groom, that was once in the service of the marquis. She is now about the age of fifty, and lives at three miles distance from Ermenonville. She is neglected by all her friends ; and the marquis's family, who otherwise would have treated her with every endearment and mark of friendship, now merely contribute to her support ; which, with a pension of fifty pounds per annum, generously bestowed, as an acknowledgment of superior merit, by the king of England, keeps her above indigence, and beneath prosperity.

While I was at the inn, I enquired of the inhabitants every particular respecting Rousseau. They all remembered *Jean Jacques*, as they affectionately called him. I walked into a house, led by an inscription, intimating that the king of Sweden had once dined there. Being Sunday, I found the mistress, with a party of her neighbours, sitting round a table at cards; they arose on my entrance, and invited me to come in. I prevailed on them again to be seated, and the good man of the house walked out with me into his garden. I asked him if he remembered Rousseau. Oh! he remembered, he said, *Jean Jacques* well; he should never forget him: "He was the best man," said he, "that ever lived! Often would he come here, and walk about the garden, and in this very spot sit down, and watch the water as it ran along in the brook, and play with the marquis's children!" I asked him if he loved the village: if the village loved him. "Sir," said he, "they loved him as a father; it was his custom to wander out in the fields, and watch them at their labours, and talk to them about their separate concerns, in the kindest manner." "He did not live long with you?" said I. "Only two months!—Such a man," said he with warmth, "should have lived two ages!"

We

We went within doors; and he brought down a pair of shoes that Rousseau used to wear; the soles and heels were of wood, and the other parts matted with reed, and lined with hair: upon a paper pasted on the outside was written;

Sabot que J. J. Rousseau portoit habituellement,
au moment de la mort, et que sa veuve a
donné au bon Antoine Maurice,
habitant d'Ermenonville.

Gabriel Brezard a voulu honorer son Nom en le
consacrant sur le — — — de l'homme,
qui ne marcha jamais que dans
le sentier de la vérité.

The old man told me, that when the king of Sweden was here, he asked to see them, hearing he had such in his possession. He brought them down in a napkin, and laid them on the table where the king was at dinner. "Take away the napkin," said the king, "cannot I touch the shoes of Rousseau?" He eyed them with a look of regard; and, turning to his host, asked him, if those relics did not give him a great deal of pleasure? The old man trembled, fearing that the king would want them; and told him, that they did, more than any thing in life. The king then copied the inscription, and returned them. Many have wished since to purchase them; and the old

man has refused five and twenty guineas for them; the Comtesse de Poligny begged some of the hair from them to put in a brilliant ring.

C H A P. CXXXIV.

OF THE GRAND RELIGIOUS CEREMONIAL, HELD
IN THE CHURCH OF NOTRE DAME AT PARIS,
ON THE ASSUMPTION OF THE VIRGIN MARY.

WE arrived just in time to squeeze into a front place in the gallery, where, shortly after, the ambassadors, with a long retinue, appeared, in order to be present at the mass. One of the Indians was dressed with his hair and cloaths *tout à la François*, and looked ridiculous enough. The church was very much crowded, and mass was performed by the archbishop of Paris, the first dignitary in France.

The view of the body of the choir, on looking down from the gallery, was extremely rich and grand;—the fine marble pavement was covered, from the altar to the door, with the richest Gobelin tapestry, wrought with the most brilliant colours, and in the most beautiful forms. In the stalls around the choir were seated the chief priests
and

and canons of the church, with three bishops, dressed in lilac gowns :—dispersed over the body, were the different orders, in the richest habiliments. Looking towards the right, you behold the altar-piece, of most exquisite workmanship, representing, in the finest Egyptian marble, the Virgin Mary, with a dead Jesus in her lap ; and, on either side, angels offering her crowns. The altar was crouded around with wax tapers of a vast size and height, which were all lighted up. Standing before the altar was the archbishop, in his robes and mitre, holding a golden crozier in his hand :—his dress was richly wrought, of gold and silver, and the finest embroidery ; and his mitre was chiefly of gold. Two priests attended, habited magnificently, whose business it was to hold out his robes, and to display them to as much advantage as possible to the spectators. A crowd of other priests in different dresses, according to their orders, were attending. Elevating your eyes a little above this dazzling spectacle, to the space between the summit of the stalls and the stone gallery, a most superb row of paintings presented themselves, executed by Le Brun, and other capital artists. Above, in the gallery, were crowds of people, and in one part, nearly opposite to me, the ambassadors and their attendants. Turning towards the body of the church, we beheld its vast

space filled with a sea of heads ; an innumerable concourse of people being assembled, some for devotion, more out of curiosity, and the greatest part to have a view of the ambassadors :—in short, whichever way we looked, the view was superlatively grand.

The archbishop began the service ; and, when dressed in all his robes, he looked very majestic. He appeared to be about forty years of age, wore his own hair curled, and had a particularly gentleman-like look : his figure was large and graceful, and his person comely and handsome. The organ struck up, and the archbishop walked from the altar, preceded by a golden cross and crossier, and a long train of priests, in their respective habits, into the body of the church, crossing himself as he went ; after having reached the organ (which is always placed over the grand door at the entrance) and made some minutes stay, they proceeded entirely round the church, and returning in the same long procession, the archbishop, and the attendant priests, took their seats at the right-hand side of the altar, the priests very carefully holding up the robes of the archbishop, that they might not be deranged or rumpled. The service then began, with a concert of music, which performed part of the mass in the middle of the choir : the music was composed purposely for the occasion.

It

It was often interrupted, and again resumed; sometimes by the archbishop, and sometimes by the priests; now in one part of the church, and now in another, which took up a considerable deal of time. The ceremonies then began at the altar; the archbishop retired to dress himself afresh, in order to be in a fit condition to make a deity. Part of his dress was put on before the altar, the priests repeatedly taking off his mitre, and replacing it again upon his head.

The archbishop then put some incense in a large silver *encensoir*, which immediately diffused a fragrant smell over the whole church, and was received by a youth of a most singular appearance. His head was shaved, and his white gown was fastened very high round him with a cestus, that left his long skirts hanging loose, like the dress of a lady in a pregnant state. There were several other youths in the same habit, who stood with their arms folded, when disengaged; and instead of bowing, always curtsied.

The archbishop and the priests were every instant employed in bowing, kneeling, and rising. The youth then began to incense the altar, and afterwards the archbishop. The mode of doing it was, by throwing the *encensoir*, pendant to a long silver chain, towards the person incensed, and

and then catching it again short in the hand. A very rich gilded bible was next presented to the archbishop, which he kissed: the incensor went round the church, with an attendant who carried the bible, and incensed every priest three times, even to the little mutes. They afterwards saluted the bible, and each returned a number of complimentary bows.

After this ceremony the archbishop himself incensed the altar; and, having finished, held out his hand to the priests, who approached, and kissed a ring upon his little finger. All the choir then did the same, except the bishops.

This concluded, which took up a considerable time, the archbishop began to prepare the sacrament. The process was easy enough, being to all outward appearance nothing more than a few bows, and repeated kneeling, which was continued for a length of time, retiring every now and then a few steps backwards. On the altar was placed a large golden sun, the back of which was turned towards the people;—the wafer being sanctified and transubstantiated, was placed by the archbishop, with great solemnity, in the center of the face of the sun. He then turned it round, and lifting up the host, exposed it to the congregation, who, at the ringing of a bell, fell down upon

upon their knees, with the profoundest reverence and adoration. I looked, at this moment, to see how the ambassadors would conduct themselves. The old one, having had a pre-intimation of it, rose up, and withdrew; the rest kept their places, behaving in the same manner as the other part of the spectators. The wine was next made with as much ceremony:—the archbishop then swallowed the wafer, and gave a little one to each of the priests, who partook before the laity. A cloth was drawn across the entrance of the altar, and held up on either side;—on this all the communicants rested their chins, as they received the wafer, that no part of it might fall on the ground and be polluted. The priests alone partook of the wine;—too good a thing to be thrown away upon unholy laymen. After the archbishop had emptied the cup, he rinsed it out with water, lest any might be left behind, and drank it: he then rinsed it again, and drank what was left; and afterwards wiped out the chalice with a clean linen cloth. The blessing of the archbishop concluded the ceremony.

CHAP. CXXXV.

LIEUTENANT PATERSON'S EXPEDITION TO
CAFFRARIA; WITH AN ACCOUNT OF A
GERMAN WHO HAD FOR SEVERAL YEARS AS-
SOCIATED WITH THE HOTTENTOT TRIBES.
A. D. 1777, 1778, 1779.

INCITED by the prospect of a country, the productions of which were unknown; I left England with a view to gratify a curiosity which, if not laudable, was at least innocent.

After arriving at the Cape, I met with Colonel Gordon, who came from Holland about this time, and was appointed commander in chief. This gentleman, who had travelled into the country in 1774, had acquired the Hottentot language, and, besides, understood Dutch, consented to accompany me in my first expedition.

From Cape Town we proceeded to Hottentot Holland, along the shore of False Bay, the country lying between which and Talbe Bay is uninhabitable, on account of a white sand blown up by the south-east winds in very large ridges. It produces

produces the *Myrica Cerifera*; the berries of which make excellent candles.

To the south-east of Cape False, or Hang Lip, is a large plain, covered with many sorts of bad grass. Here I found a species of *Erica*, which was quite new, with a spike of beautiful long tubular yellow flowers.

The next place of consequence visited by us, was Zwellendam, which is the residence of a Land Droßt, or Chief Justice. It is situated under the chain of mountains which begin near the Bay Alagon, their direction west north-west. The climate in this country differs much from that at the Cape; for it is seldom that the south-east winds blow hard, but there are often storms from the north-west. This being the time when the boors* meet for exercising, we remained here a few days, during which time I made several excursions along the mountains, and through the woods. At this time very few of the arboreous plants were in flower, so that I could not preserve any perfect specimens. The *Piper Cordifolia* is very common in the woods. I found some beautiful specimens of the *Helianthus* and *Phylicas*. The whole country affords good pasture for cat-

* Farmers.

tle, and produces plenty of corn and wine: the soil is a hard yellowish clay intermixed with rotten rocks.

On the twenty-sixth of October we proceeded to Groot Faders Bosch, or Grand Father's Wood, where we were obliged to stop for a few hours on account of the rain. We sent our waggon the best road to the Plata Kloaf, and went a nearer way ourselves, which, however, was so very slippery that we could not possibly ride. We crossed the Doven Hocks * Rivier, and, late in the evening, came to a farmer's house, situated close to the pass of Kloaf. This district is called the land of Egypt, and apparently contains about thirteen farms, which are dispersed at the distance of from four to six miles from each other: here we were regaled with excellent fruit, particularly oranges, and some European fruits. Our waggon not arriving, detained us till the twenty-eighth, which gave me an opportunity of examining the country, where I found many curious plants. I observed that, in consequence of the rains, the white ants (with which the whole country abounds) were all out and with wings. Several of the Hottentots and slaves were collecting these insects,

* Pigeon-house River.

which

which I found, upon inquiry, were intended for food. Prejudice, indeed, alone has prevented the Europeans from making a similar use of them; for, in my different journeys in this country, I have sometimes been under the necessity of using them as food, and found them far from disagreeable. These insects are very particularly described by the late Mr. Smeathman, under the name of Termites. Great differences are observed in the white ants, according to the soil and climate in which they are found. In the East Indies they prove extremely destructive to the wood; but at the Cape they are never known to injure any vegetable substance, except the grass in those places where they most abound. It is not by devouring the grass that they occasion its destruction, but by raising a number of hills, which impede the progress of vegetation.

We now proceeded to leave this uncommonly delightful and fertile territory, extending along the south-side of the range of mountains, and terminating near the Krome * Rivier, to enter into a country, which is, perhaps, one of the most barren in the world. This is called the Channa Land; and derives its name from a species of Me-

* Crooked River.

zembryanthimum, which is called Channa by the natives, and is exceedingly esteemed among them. They make use of it both in chewing and in smoaking.

We began in the month of November, by directing our course east by south, and at eleven came to the house of an European, where we rested all day. Here I made some addition to my collection of plants, which continued in tolerable order.

From this place our course was easterly during the whole of the next day, leaving the Comnassia Berg * on our right hand, and the Swart Berg on our left. We found here some hot baths, to which we were directed by observing two farmers making use of them: one of the men had been bit by a snake, and was considerably recovered, though his leg remained much swelled, and could not bear any fatigue. These baths are impregnated with a large quantity of iron; and all along the mountains are very thick strata of that ore. The thermometer rose in the different baths, from one hundred and five to one hundred and eight. In the afternoon we pursued our journey, the Comnassia Berg bearing north-west by north to south-east by south, and ending south-

* A species of Rhus.

west by south, about two leagues from the baths. We found here many ostriches and koedoes, one of the latter we shot.

On the fourth, we proceeded on our journey through an extensive plain, called the Beer * Valley; and about nine in the morning we came to some miserable huts in the stile of the Hottentots. Here we found an old German who had attached himself to one of the Hottentot tribes, and had resided with them for about twenty years. His garment was composed of sheep skins, similar to those which are worn by the natives; and his method of living was the same. This man told me that every three or four years he went to the Cape with a few cattle for sale, and, with the produce of his goods, purchased powder, lead, and trinkets for his Hottentots. This place abounds with lions more than any other of the inhabited parts of this country. The old German (whose name was Nuwenhousen) had shot several before we arrived; some of which we saw of a very large size.

I added considerably to my collection at this place, and made some stay for the purpose of examining the mountains, which seemed covered with many uncommon plants; though there is great danger of travelling on account of wild

* Bear.

beasts, as well as of the Boshmens, who often came down, waiting an opportunity of plundering the inhabitants of their cattle. In one of my excursions I fell in with a party of these savages; but they behaved very well, only making signs for tobacco, which I gave them; and they in return offered me some honey which they had collected in the mountains: they were armed with bows and arrows, and the captain who was with them had a hassagai, or spear, in his hand, and heavy ivory rings on his right arm. On my return to the farmer's house, I found them to be of the tribe of Chonacquas.

On the evening of the twenty-third, one of the servants informed us, that he had seen a lion before sun-set, about a thousand yards from the house. Expecting a visit from it in the night, every preparation was made for defence; but next morning we were informed of its having been at a house belonging to an old woman, about four miles distant, and that it had destroyed some of her cattle. I went to the place, and we set a spring-gun in the path where we observed it had passed; on the night of the twenty-fifth, we heard the report of the gun, and next morning found the animal dead. It proved to be a lioness, and not very large.

On

On the third of December I made an excursion to one of the most agreeable places, in point of situation and fertility, that I had yet seen in Africa. It is situate at the source of the Elephant's River; it produces plenty of corn, with the least cultivation imaginable. After the river has overflowed the banks, the natives sow the grain; and the climate is so favourable, that it is always ripe here a month sooner than at the Cape. It also produces good fruit, such as oranges, figs, mulberries, peaches, apricots, almonds, &c. This place is called the Good Hope.

CH A P. CXXXVI.

OF THE HOSPITALITY OF THE CAFFRES;
WITH THEIR MANNERS, REGULATIONS, AND
CUSTOMS.

DURING my second journey I shot several beautiful birds, with which I was unacquainted before, and made a great addition to my botanical collection. Among other plants we found geraniums, a new species of ixia, with a long spike of crimson flowers, the most beautiful I ever beheld;

beheld; several species of *Moræa* and *gladiolus*; a beautiful species of *euphorbia oxalis*, and *erinum*.

In the third journey it was my fortune to traverse a part of the continent of Africa, which never had been visited before by any European; I mean Caffraria. So jealous are these people of the encroachments of the Dutch (the only Europeans they are acquainted with) that they strictly prohibit individuals from entering their territory; while its remoteness has prevented the States, or the Company, from considering it as an object of conquest. I was not, however, deterred from the attempt by the difficulty of the undertaking; and with this great object in view, I set out from Cape Town on the twenty-third of December, 1778, and proceeded towards Zwelendam, where I arrived the third of January, 1779. Here I was joined by one of the Company's overseers, Mr. Tunies, who was going to the eastward to change cattle for tobacco and beads.

We passed the False River, and Caffre Kulls Rivier, and thence proceeded to the Goud's Rivier. We next directed our course to the Hagal Kraal, leaving the shore of the Indian Ocean on our right hand, at the distance of about ten miles; and on the twelfth our road lay over a large chain
I of

of mountains, Atquas Kloaf, which is very difficult to pass.

We proceeded in our course to the eastward, on the fourteenth, and in the evening arrived at the beginning of the Lange Kloaf, which Mr. Mason remarks is about an hundred miles long, and about two miles in breadth; the soil is a strong reddish clay, and the pasture very unwholesome for cattle.

We continued our journey on the twenty-third, to the Camteurs Rivier, where we rested during the heat of the day. On the banks of this river are woods of very large trees, particularly of the Mimosa, and other arboreous plants peculiar to this country. These woods are generally frequented by wild buffaloes, which are very fierce, and which consequently render travelling very dangerous. About ten o'clock at night we arrived at the place where my waggon already was, and to our great surprise saw a wild buffalo standing quite close to it, which we at first took for one of my oxen. Before we could ascertain whether this was the case or not, it sprung into the wood.

We directed our course from this place south by east, through an uneven country, and in the evening came to Van Stada's Rivier, where we observed a beautiful wood upon the declivity of a

hill, extending to the very banks of the river. Here I found some plants of the *Aletris Fragrans*, upwards of twenty feet in height, and many in flower, as well as other beautiful plants. There were also a great variety of birds of the most beautiful plumage I had ever seen in the country.

On the twenty-sixth I visited the sea-shore, which was five or six miles to the southward. About a thousand yards from the sea, the mouth of the river forms a lake, being dammed up by a bank of sand, which extends along the shore. In the afternoon we continued our journey through an extensive plain, where I found variety of bulbous plants, and numerous herds of the different animals peculiar to this country, such as the eland, quacha, zebra, and a species of antelope, called by the Dutch hartebeest, which is the *capra dorcas* of Linnæus. We had the good fortune to shoot one of these.

This evening we arrived at the Swart Kops Rivier, where we passed the night.

The next morning we were overtaken by a peasant, who was on his way to the Boshmens Land, and was glad to accompany us, as this place lay in our way.

At noon we passed the Swart Kops Rivier. Zout Pan, which is situate in this neighbourhood,
is

is an object that cannot fail to attract the attention of travellers. This lake is a plain much above the level of the sea, and between three and four miles in circumference. At some seasons of the year it is formed into an entire mass of fine white salt, which has a very striking appearance. The heavy rains had dissolved the middle part of it, a short time before my arrival, but round the sides was a hard crust of salt, exactly resembling ice.

The adjacent country is covered with a variety of frutescent and succulent plants, many of which were quite new, in particular some of the euphorbia. Here we were visited by two Caffres, the first we had seen; for they very seldom venture so far out of their own country. At night we arrived at a place called, by the Hottentots, Kow Cha, which is much frequented by lions, rhinoceroses, and buffaloes.

We proceeded on the twenty-ninth to the eastward, towards the Sondag's Rivier, or Sunday's River. On our way we saw great numbers of wild dogs, which travel in flocks, and are very destructive when they get to flocks of sheep. Wild dogs are also found very near the Cape. They are much larger than the jackal, with large irregular blotches or spots on their skin. After a

very disagreeable day's march, through a dry, stony country, we arrived at night at the Sunday's River, which is distant from the Cape Town about nine hundred miles. This river was the extent of Mr. Mason's journey to the eastward.

The following day I visited one of the Dutch boors, who had resided in that part of the country for many years. This man was possessed of numerous herds of cattle, but had no corn, and scarcely a house to live in, though the place was favourable for both.

In the afternoon we continued our journey to a plantation called the Sand Fleet. The country here is extremely beautiful and picturesque, very hilly, and the hills are shaded with impenetrable woods; the vallies well watered and covered with grass, which affords excellent pasture for cattle. Great numbers of quadrupeds inhabit this neighbourhood, such as lions, panthers, elephants, rhinoceroes, buffaloes, spring hocks, &c. At a little distance to the eastward are some Kraals, belonging to the tribe of Hottentots, called Chonacguas. These people are much darker in their complexion, and better shaped, than any of the other tribes I had before seen. It is not very uncommon for the Caffres and Chonacguas to quarrel, which generally ends in an engagement. In these

these encounters several hundreds of the Caffres sometimes unite to oppose their enemies, who very seldom bring a proportionable force into the field. But the dexterity with which the Hottentots use their bows and arrows, and the practice of poisoning the latter, render them very dangerous enemies to those who only use the Hassagai.

We directed our course eastward, to the Boshman's River; and at noon I visited a Kraal, belonging to a Hottentot captain, called de Royter.

In the night of February the second, we arrived at a place called the K'a Cha Chow, which is one of the branches of the Boshman's River.

Early in February, at night, we arrived at the Fish River, where we staid two days. During the night we had heavy showers of rain, with loud claps of thunder. Here the river assumes a southern direction, and empties itself into the great Indian Ocean, at about twenty miles distance. The deepest parts of the river are inhabited by the hippopotamus, and the adjacent woods by elephants, rhinoceroes, and buffaloes. We shot several of the buffaloes, which were much heavier than an European bullock.

We proceeded easterly towards the Caffres, being informed that we could reach their country in two or three days. Most of the arboreous plants

in these parts were unknown to me, except the *Euphorbia Antiquorum*, *Erythrina Corallodendron*, and the *Gardenia Stellata*. We took with us an Hottentot who was perfectly acquainted with the language of the Caffres. In passing through the thickets, on the banks of the Fish River, we encountered considerable difficulties, till we fortunately got into an elephant's path, in which we continued till noon. We then crossed the river, and entered a spacious plain, which afforded us great variety of the most beautiful evergreens I had ever seen; and several bulbous plants, such as irises and crinums, many of which I found in flower. I particularly noticed one species of this plant, the flowers of which were crimson, and in beauty and elegance far exceeded any I had ever met with. In the evening we encamped under a large mimosa, and made fires during the night.

After passing this extensive plain, we entered a wood about eight miles broad. In many places the trees were thinly scattered; in these openings we discovered numerous herds of buffaloes, which had not the least appearance of shyness; one of them we wounded. Soon after this we saw a herd of elephants, about eighty in number, which approached so near to us, that we could observe the

the length and thickness of their teeth. After leaving the wood, we ascended a steep mountain, where we had a view of the Indian Ocean to the southward; and to the northward, a hilly country covered with trees and evergreen shrubs, which extended about thirty miles. The prospect was bounded by a range of mountains, called the Bamboo Berg, on which grows a species of Bamboo. To the east we had a view of a pleasant country, decorated with great variety of plants. The country is here well watered and produces excellent pasture for cattle. Towards the evening of the seventh, we observed a fire about ten miles to the eastward of us, upon the slope of a green hill. Our interpreter told us this was at a Caffre village. At sunset we discovered another much nearer, and saw several herds of cattle. About eight in the evening we met three of the Caffres, who were much surprized at our appearance, as we were certainly the first Europeans they had ever seen. They speedily returned and alarmed the whole village before we arrived; but on our arrival they received us kindly, brought us milk, and offered us a fat bullock, agreeably to their usual hospitable custom. This village consisted of about fifty houses, situate on the banks of a pleasant river, called in the

Caffre language, Mugu Ranie ; and it belongs to their chief. It contained about three hundred inhabitants, all of whom were servants or soldiers to their chief, who was likewise the proprietor of the numerous herds of cattle. These people subsist on the milk of their cows, and on game, not being allowed to kill any of their cattle. The men milk the cows, and the women take care of the gardens and corn.

We were accompanied by all these people from one village to another, till we arrived at the place belonging to the person whom they denominate their chief or king. His habitation was situate on a pleasant river, called Becha Cum, or Milk River. Indeed all their houses are built on the banks of rivers or streams ; but there was no corn or garden near it. The chief had about an hundred cows, which supplied him and his household with milk. His family consisted of about twenty-two servants, who attended him wherever he went. On our arrival he seemed very shy, and kept at a great distance for about an hour, when a number of Caffres met and accompanied him to his house. He soon afterwards sent one of his servants to invite us thither. The first thing I presented him with was some beads, of which he freely accepted. I also offered him some of our tobacco ;

tobacco; but he seemed to prefer his own, which was much lighter. He soon offered me a herd of fat bullocks in return; but I refused to take them, which seemed to affront him greatly, and he often repeated, "What do you think of our country?" After a few words between us, I accepted of one, which we immediately shot; this surprised all the spectators, which were about six hundred persons, few of them having ever seen a gun, or heard the report of one. We had a part of the bullock dressed, which I thought much superior to the beef near the Cape. The rest of the animal I distributed to the king and his servants. He still seemed displeased that I would accept of nothing more in return. I then asked him for some of their baskets, which he gave me, and also two of their lances or hassagais, which they make with great ingenuity: but the construction of the baskets, which are made by their women, is much more surprising; they are composed of grass, and woven so closely, that they are capable of holding any fluid.

During the night I observed that there were two guards placed on each side the door of the chief's house, who were relieved about every two hours.

On the ninth I proposed to proceed farther to the east, allured by the pleasantness of the country, and its affording variety of unknown plants; but found there was a river a little to the eastward of us, called by the natives the Kys Comma. We then determined to return the same way we came.

The men amongst the Caffres are from five feet ten inches to six feet high, and well proportioned, and in general evince great courage in attacking lions, or any beasts of prey. This nation is now divided into two parties; to the northward are a number of them commanded by one Chatha Bea, or Tambushie, who has obtained the latter denomination from his mother, a woman of the tribe of Hottentots, called Tambukies. This man was the son of a chief, called Pharoa, who died about three years before, and left two sons, Cha Cha Bea, and another named Dfirika, who claimed the supreme authority on account of his mother being of the Caffre nation. This occasioned a contest between the two brothers, in the course of which Cha Cha Bea was driven out of his territories, with a number of his adherents. The unfortunate chief travelled about an hundred miles to the northward of
Khouta,

Khouta, where he now resides, and has entered into an alliance with the Bosshmen Hottentots.

The colour of the Caffres is a jet black, their teeth white as ivory, and their eyes large. The cloathing of both sexes is nearly the same, consisting entirely of the hides of oxen, which are as pliant as cloth. The men wear tails of different animals tied round their thighs, pieces of brass in their hair, and large ivory rings on their arms; they are also adorned with the hair of lions, and feathers fastened on their heads, with many other fantastical ornaments. When they are about nine years of age, they undergo the operation of being circumcised. They are extremely fond of dogs, which they exchange for cattle, and to such a height do they carry this passion, that if one particularly pleases them, they will give two bullocks in exchange for it. Their whole exercise through the day is hunting, fighting, or dancing. They are expert in throwing their lances, and in time of war use shields made of the hides of oxen. The women are employed in the cultivation of their gardens and corn. They cultivate several vegetables, which are not indigenous to their country, such as tobacco, water-melons, a small sort of kidney-beans, and hemp; none of which I found growing spontaneously. The women make

o 6

their

their baskets, and the mats which they sleep on. The men have great pride in their cattle; they cut their horns in such a way as to be able to turn them into any shape they please, and teach them to answer a whistle. Some of them use an instrument for this purpose, similar to a Boshman's pipe. When they wish their cattle to return home, they go a little way from the house, and blow this small instrument, which is made of ivory or bone, and so constructed as to be heard at a great distance, and in this manner bring all their cattle home without any difficulty. The soil of this country is a blackish loomy ground, and so extremely fertile, that every vegetable substance, whether sown or planted, grows here with great luxuriance.

From what I observed of this country, I am induced to believe that it is greatly superior to any other known part of Africa.

The woods produce variety of arboreous plants, and some of a great size: they are inhabited by elephants, buffaloes, &c. There were also a variety of beautiful birds and butterflies; but they are so shy, that I was able only to preserve two birds of that country.

When we returned to our waggon, on the ninth, we were accompanied by the chief and
about

about six hundred of his servants or soldiers, who followed us till noon, when we took leave of them. We then directed our course towards the Great Fish River, where we stayed all night.

On the twelfth we proceeded on our return by the rout we had before taken; and I collected many seeds, and fruits of evergreens, in the woods.

We arrived at the Now Tio towards the evening. Mr. Van Renan left the waggon, accompanied by Hottentots, with an intention of shooting at a herd of buffaloes, which they observed at about the distance of a mile.

Upon our arrival at Cableows Rivier, we agreed to remain in that place a few days. Here we were supplied with great variety of fruit, as it was in the height of the season for grapes, water-melons, and peaches.

We proceeded westward from Zie Koe Rivier, or Sea Cow River, and on the 1st of March, in the evening, arrived at the house of a Dutchman, where we rested that night, and the next day passed the Krome Rivier.

Upon finding the country extremely dry, and scarcely a plant to be seen, I left Mr. Van Renan with the waggon, and directed my course towards
the

the Cape, where I arrived on the 23d of March, after a journey of three months.

CHAP. CXXXVII.

OF THE HARDSHIPS SUSTAINED BY MR. PATTERSON AND HIS RETINUE; WITH A PARTICULAR DESCRIPTION OF THE CAMELO-PARDALIS.

WE continued our course north, through a sandy country. We observed to the eastward a high ridge of sandy hills evidently thrown up by the south-east winds, which blow here every day. At noon we observed we were in latitude twenty-nine degrees, five minutes; we then left the wagons, and directed our course along the shore, which was much elevated. In the highest rocks we found several petrifications of shells, some of which were about an hundred and fifty feet above the surface of the sea.

About this time the men and cattle suffered the most dreadful hardships for want of water; but when the poor animals were dropping down, a fountain about six miles to the northward was happily discovered.

We

We continued here [at the fountain] a whole day, in order to rest our cattle, and in the mean while Colonel Gordon and myself made an excursion to the sea, which was distant about nine miles. We saw many large mimosa trees which had been thrown up by the ocean, and some at the distance of a mile from the water, were almost buried in the sand; from these appearances we concluded that we were not far from the Great River.

Colonel Gordon, Jacobus Van Renan, and I, left the waggons and proceeded on our journey. In our way we found an ostrich nest, containing thirty-four fresh eggs, which proved excellent food. We saw several zebras, quachas, and elks. At ten in the forenoon we arrived at the river, which appeared at once to be a new creation to us, after having passed nine days in crossing an arid and sultry desert, where no living animal was to be seen, and during which our cattle had but twice tasted the luxury of a drop of water. We here unfaddled our horses, and refreshed ourselves by the side of the river, under the shade of a willow, which hung over its banks. We observed several old uninhabited huts, where were numbers of baboons bones, with those of various other wild beasts. About a thousand yards from the
banks

banks of the river, the country is extremely barren, and to the eastward very mountainous. On these eminences there is scarcely any apparent vegetation ; but in the plain part of the country, to the westward, I found a variety of the most beautiful plants, particularly geraniums and asclepias ; but very few of the succulent kind. The banks of the river produce lofty trees peculiar to this country, such as mimosa, salix, and a species of rhus, called by the Dutch, rezyne houd. There are also a few trees of ebony ; but to the eastward it grows in still greater abundance. In the afternoon, our waggon not being arrived, we returned the same way we came, and found our people had taken a different direction. We followed their track, and overtook them near the mouth of the river.

In the evening we launched Colonel Gordon's boat, and hoisted Dutch colours. Colonel Gordon proposed first to drink the States' health, and then that of the Prince of Orange, and the company ; after which he gave the river the name of the Orange River, in honour of that prince. We agreed to remain in this situation a few days, and to visit the opposite shore, as we had in this place very good pasture for our cattle.

Towards

Towards the evening of the following day we had the great satisfaction of beholding Mr. Pinar, belonging to Colonel Gordon, who, with four Hottentots, had parted from us some time before. They looked dreadfully ill, having travelled five days through sultry deserts, over sandy hills and rocky mountains, without tasting food or swallowing a drop of water.

The land at this place, which is low and barren, to the west sandy, and to the east rocky, forms a flat point, which extends from the mouth of the river, north-west half west. The opening of this river is about half a mile in breadth, but is enclosed by a ridge of rocks lying east and west, a mile from the shore, so that ships cannot enter.

The 20th of August I crossed the river, in company with Colonel Gordon, and left the boat in order to make an excursion to the westward. Here we observed the print of human feet, which appeared to us to be fresh. Upon this we resolved to pursue the track, and on our way saw several snares laid for the wild beasts. After travelling about five miles to the northward, we perceived some of the natives on a sandy hillock, about one mile from us. We made several signals to them, but they seemed to be quite wild, and made their escape. We continued to follow their
path.

path, which brought us to their habitation ; but we were still as unable to bring about any intercourse with them as before ; for the whole family immediately betook themselves to flight, except a little dog, which seemed to be equally unacquainted with Europeans. Here we stayed some time, and examined their huts. In them we found several species of aromatic plants which they had been drying, and a few skins of seals. Their huts were much superior to those of the generality of Hottentots ; they were loftier, and thatched with grass, and were furnished with stools made of the back bones of the grampus. Several species of fish were suspended from poles stuck into the ground.

After some time, Colonel Gordon got within reach of the natives, and after much persuasion induced them to return to their Kraal. They were eleven in number, and were the only people who inhabited this part of the country.

Though few in number, they were governed by a chief, whose name was Cout. The mode of living amongst these people was in the highest degree wretched ; and they are apparently the dirtiest of all the Hottentot tribes. Their dress is composed of the skins of seals and jackals, the flesh of which they eat. When it happens that a grampus is cast ashore, they remove their huts to the

the place, and subsist upon it as long as any part of it remains; and in this manner it sometimes affords them sustenance for half a year, though in a great measure decayed and putrified by the sun. They smear their skins with the oil or train, the odour of which is so powerful, that their approach may be perceived some time before they present themselves to the sight. They carry their water in the shells of ostrich eggs, and the bladders of seals, which they shoot with bows.

The next day we again crossed the river, to inquire whether there was any possibility of proceeding on our journey to the eastward; but of this the natives seemed unable to give us any information. We observed that all those people had lost the first joint of their little finger; the reason they gave for cutting it off was, that it was a cure for a particular sickness, to which they were subject when young.

The last day we intended to remain at this part of the river, we employed in fishing, and were visited by our friends from the opposite shore. I observed they eat with a very good appetite, some old shoes, which some of our Hottentots gave them. Their own shoes are made of a piece of leather which merely defends the soles of their feet
from

from thorns, and is in general fastened to their toes and ankle.

By a very accurate observation, we found the mouth of the river to be in latitude twenty-eight degrees, thirty-three minutes.

Mr. Pinar returned to the waggon in the evening, and acquainted us that there were a number of lions about twelve miles to the eastward, attracted by a dead elephant which had been shot by him during the time he was absent from the waggons.

We continued our excursion to the eastward, through a hilly county, and the most barren I ever saw.

On the 29th we left the river, and after travelling about three hours, our dogs attacked a herd of zebras, which were at a little distance from the waggons; they seemed not in the least shy, and we shot two of them, which detained us about an hour; part of the flesh we took with us, and it proved very good food.

On their way to the Cape, our travellers arrived, on the second of September, at the Great or Sea Fountain; and the next day continued to advance through the desert; on the fourth they arrived at Sand River, where they rested.

On

On the sixth we prosecuted our journey thence to the Small Nimiqua Land, and stopped that night on the same river, about eight miles to the eastward of Rhinoceros Fountain, which we had before visited. Our provision began to be short, but one of the Hottentots, determining, notwithstanding this circumstance, not to be deprived of his meal, contrived, during the night, to rob the others of their shoes, which he completely devoured.

On our first arrival amongst our hospitable friends, (at the house of Mr. Engelbright) we were quite invigorated, and delighted with the appearance of every thing around us. We had exchanged a country untrodden by human feet, or only inhabited by the most wretched of savages, for the society of friends and generous hosts, and after a journey of six weeks, through dry and sultry deserts, found ourselves in a land adorned with flowers of the most beautiful colours.

We agreed to remain here a few days, during which I lost my companion, Colonel Gordon, who intended to direct his course to the eastward in search of a nation, called Briquas, of the Caffre tribe. My intention was to proceed to the northward, to cross the Orange River, and to visit the Great Nimiqua Land.

When we had reached Great Brack Fountain, the latter end of September, we met several Hottentots,

tentots, who had been at the Great Nimiqua Land, exchanging cattle for beads and tobacco. On the fourteenth of October, we crossed Orange River, but not without much difficulty, and encamped in the evening, at the distance of twelve miles northward, under a large ebony tree. Directing our course north-east, we passed Lion's River, the banks of which are inhabited by those animals. After a day's journey from this place, I found a most beautiful plant of the *Pentandria Monogynia* class: it grows to six feet high, and is full of long spines from the ground to the tops, and forms a large crown of crisped leaves, and reddish tubular flowers, tinged with yellow and green. On the seventeenth we directed our course north-east, to a small fountain of water; here we had an extensive view of a large plain to the northward, bounded by a range of mountains, which were part of the Brenas in a direction from east to west. This country is inhabited by zebras, rhinoceroes, koedoes, and camelopardalises; six of the latter of which our travellers pursued, and killed one of them, which proved to be a male. The existence of this animal has been doubted in Europe; I therefore, preserved the skin and skeleton; the dimensions of which were,

I

Height

	Ft.	In.
Height of his natural position, from the hoof to the top of the horns,	14	9
—— from the hoof to the shoulder,	9	7.5
—— from the hind hoof to the rump,	8	1.5
Length of the fore legs,	5	7
—— of the hind legs,	5	6.5
—— of the mane from head to shoul- ders, - - - - -	5	2.5
—— of the body from shoulder to rump, - - - - -	5	9
Circumference of the neck below,	5	0
—— in the middle,	2	10
—— at the head,	2	1
Length of the neck,	5	3
—— of the tail without the hair,	2	9.5
—— with the hair,	4	10.5
Breadth of the hind hoof,	0	5.5
Length of ditto,	0	8.25
—— of fore hoof,	0	8.75
Breadth of ditto,	0	5.75
Length of the horns,	1	0.5
Distance between ditto,	0	3

Length of the hair of the mane from three to four inches, and of a reddish colour*. These ani-

* The skin is now stuffed, and in the possession of John Hunter, Esq. Leicester-square.

mals chiefly subsist upon the mimosa, and wild apricots. Their colour is in general reddish, or dark brown and white, and some of them black and white; they are cloven footed; have four teats; their tail resembles that of a bullock; but the hair of the tail is much stronger, and in general black; they have eight fore teeth below, but none above, and six grinders, or double teeth, on each side, above and below; the tongue is rather pointed and rough; they have no footlock hoofs; they are not swift, but can continue a long chase before they stop; which may be the reason that few of them are shot. The ground is so sharp that a horse is in general lame before he can get within shot of them, which was the case with our horses, otherwise I should have preserved two perfect specimens of a male and female. It is difficult to distinguish them at any distance, from the length of their body, which, together with the length of their neck, gives them the appearance of a decayed tree.

In the course of this journey I have had frequent occasion to mention the mimosas, which abound particularly in the Great Nimiqua Land; and I cannot close my journal, without once more calling the reader's attention to a vegetable production, which must strike every traveller with
astonish-

astonishment; not only from its uncommon size, but from the different uses for which nature seems to have intended it. It produces quantities of gum, which is considered by the natives as a peculiarly delicate species of food; the leaves and lower points of the branches seem to constitute the principal aliment of the *camelopardalis*; and, from the extent of its boughs, and smoothness of the trunk, it affords a sufficient defence to a species of gregarious bird, called the *Loxia*, against the tribe of serpents, and other reptiles, which would otherwise destroy its eggs.

CHAP. CXXXVIII.

ON THE NESTS OF THE LOXIÆ.

THE manner in which these birds build their nests is highly curious. In one, which I saw, there could not be less than from eight hundred to one thousand, residing under the same roof. I call it a roof, because it perfectly resembles that of a thatched house, and the ridge forms an angle so acute and so smooth, projecting over the entrance of the nest below, that it is impossible for any reptile to approach them.

Their industry seems almost equal to that of the bee; throughout the day they appear to be busily

employed in carrying a fine species of grass, which is the principal material they employ for the purpose of erecting this extraordinary work, as well as for additions and repairs. Though my short stay in the country was not sufficient to satisfy me by ocular proof, that they added to their nest, as they annually increased in numbers ; still from the many trees which I have seen borne down with the weight, and others which I have observed with their boughs completely covered over, it would appear that this really was the case ; when the tree, which is the support of this aerial city, is obliged to give way to the increase of weight, it is obvious that they are no longer protected, and are under the necessity of rebuilding in other trees.

One of these deserted nests I had the curiosity to break down, so as to inform myself of the internal structure of it, and found it equally ingenious with that of the external. There are many entrances, each of which forms a regular street, with nests on both sides at about two inches distance from each other.

The grass with which they build, is called the Boshman's grass, and I believe the seed of it to be their principal food ; though, on examining their nests, I found the wings and legs of different insects.

From

From every appearance, the nest which I dissected had been inhabited for many years ; and some parts of it were much more complete than others ; this, therefore, I conceive nearly to amount to a proof that the animals added to it at different times, as they found necessary, from the increase of the family, or rather, I should say, the nation or community.

C H A P. CXXXIX.

MR. CONSETT'S EXPEDITION TO SWEDEN,
SWEDISH LAPLAND, AND FINLAND.

MR. Consett, in company with Sir George Liddel, Bart. and Mr. Bowes, set out from Ravensworth Castle, on the twenty-fourth day of May, 1768, and embarked about six the same evening at Shields, on board of the Gottenburgh Merchant, Capt. George Fothergill, and arrived at Gottenburgh on the twenty-seventh. This place is clean, neat, and well built ; the streets are regular and uniform ; the houses consist chiefly of wood, and are painted so as to resemble brick and stone. Part of the town stands upon a swampy

plain, which as in Holland is intersected by canals, and the other part on the declivity of a hill. The harbour is commodious and convenient. There are establishments here for several branches of commerce, particularly an East India company, and a herring fishery. The entrance of the harbour is guarded by the fort of New Elfsburg, which is situated on a small rocky island and garrisoned. The markets here are extremely well supplied with necessaries, which may all be procured at very moderate prices. The chief magistrate of Gottenburgh is the burgo-master, who regulates the markets, and has the civil direction of the town, in the same manner as the mayor of corporate towns in England. From Gottenburgh our travellers proceeded to Stockholm, which they reached on the seventh of June.

“The day after our arrival,” says the author, “we dined at a tavern, remarkable for dirt and bad accommodation. In the evening we went to the opera; the house is a handsome building, magnificently lighted up. His majesty, the young prince, and many of the nobility were present.

“The dresses of the actors were superb; the performance a Swedish historical piece, representing Gustavus I. besieging the city of Stockholm, and routing the Danes out of the country. A magnificent

nificent statue is erected before the diet-house, in memory of that prince, whom the Swedes regard at this day as their deliverer from Danish tyranny.

“ The next day we waited upon Sir Thomas Wroughton, who is the English minister resident at this court ; a gentleman of great politeness and affability, who fills that department with much credit to himself, and honour to his country.

“ On Saturday, the tenth, we made a party to view the citadel, an ancient building, where may be seen the royal armoury, colours, and other trophies worthy of observation, taken by the military heroes of the nation. The curiosities which we thought most remarkable were, Charles the XII.’s shirt, coat, boots, and gloves, which he wore at the time he was killed at the siege of Fredrickshall. The regimental coat is of a dark blue colour, with large round gilt buttons, the waistcoat and breeches yellow, his shirt fine, but plain, a black plain cravat, his boots very strong and long, with square toes and steel spurs, his gloves made of very strong leather with stiff tops ; the hat also which he wore that day was shot through above the right eye, a shot which killed him upon the spot, Various are the conjectures, even to this day, concerning the fall of that rash hero. It is surmised, with circumstantial probability, that he fell by the

hand of some of his own army. It is certain, blood is still to be seen on the gloves, and the mark of his fingers is evident upon his sword belt. It seems as if he had put his hand to the wound when shot, and immediately attempted to draw his sword to stab or defend himself against the assassin. Undoubtedly he had involved his country in much debt, and many difficulties; but being of a turbulent spirit (almost bordering on madness) would not listen to the distresses and repeated solicitations of his injured subjects. His premature death, therefore, may be thus accounted for, without any improbability. He fell a martyr to his ambition."

Mr. Confett tells us, that the present King of Sweden is rather low in person, but well-made and active; that it is very singular, that one side of his face does not at all resemble the other, that he delights much in military exercises, and that he forms an annual camp in the neighbourhood of Stockholm, where he dedicates his time to military improvements.

After leaving Stockholm, our travellers pursued their journey through Upsal to Tornao, which is the chief town of West Bothnia, about three hundred and twenty miles north-east of the capital, and situated on a river of the same name,
which

which rises in Lapland, and running south-east, falls into the gulph of Bothnia. The people here carry on a tolerable trade in furs with the Laplanders, their neighbours in the west and north, and with the Finlanders, who inhabit the eastern side of the gulph.

“ The most northern point to which our journey extended was Tornao, from whence I have endeavoured to give you some account of the inhabitants of this country. We left that place yesterday, and though our accommodations were not of the most agreeable nature, yet they were rendered tolerable by the civility and politeness with which we were entertained. We had not travelled far before we were informed, that we might have an opportunity of observing a Laplander and his family, who were feeding their herd of reindeer at no great distance. We got out of the carriage, and walked about the distance of an English mile, through a very thick wood, where we found their family in a tent or hut. This consisted of an old man and his wife, a young man and his wife, with a very young child, probably about two months old. The infant was most curiously trussed up in a cradle or machine, almost resembling a fiddle-case, made of the thick bark of a tree, so formed that it exactly contained the babe

who was fixed in it, with a kind of brass chain, made so portable and light that the mother might easily carry it in one hand. This cradle, which is also sometimes made of a hollow piece of timber, like a small boat, the Lapland women, when they travel, tie with the child in it to their back. The child is not covered with bed-clothes, but with a soft and fine moss, over which they lay the tender skin of a young rein-deer. When they rock the child they fasten the cradle with a rope to the top of the hut, and tossing it from one side to the other lull it to sleep.

“ On our departure we presented them, in return for their civilities, with some wine, which they seemed to relish very much, but gave us to understand that brandy would have been more acceptable.

“ The Laplanders are a strong-featured people, low in stature, but so constitutionally hard as to bear the severity of the most inclement season. These people are generally born in woods, and are frequently upon the snow, and wanderers from their birth to their life's end. Their huts are formed of pieces of timber or rafters joined together, and covered with turf, or the branches or bark of pine trees, so that architecture here may be said to appear in its first rudiments. Sometimes

times coarse cloth makes part of the covering of their tents. In some places we were told, that their houses were built upon the trunks of trees, raised above the surface of the earth, or upon a stone foundation, to prevent, in those desolate regions, their being over-whelmed in the enormous drifts of snow, or devoured by wild beasts.

“ In summer the Laplanders wear a close garment, which reaches to the middle of their legs, girded close about them with a belt. They have no linen, but their clothes are made in general of a coarse wool without dying; their shoes and caps of the skin of the rein-deer, with the hair outwards. In winter their clothes are a skin, with the hair inwards. The women’s apparel is not very different from those of the men.”

It has been said that this short tour, which was performed in about three months, was undertaken in consequence of a wager made by Sir Henry Liddel, of going to Lapland, returning thence in a certain time, and bringing home two females of that country, and two rein-deer. Whatever truth there may be in this report, it is certain, that Sir Henry brought two Lapland women, and two rein-deer to England. The women, after being some time here, where they were considered as great curiosities, were sent back to their own

country with about fifty pounds in money, which they looked upon as great riches.

CHAP. CXL.

ON THE PRESENT STATE OF THE INQUISITION IN SPAIN.

DON Pablo Olavidè, a native of Peru, had risen by his abilities to the first places in the administration, those of Intendant of the four kingdoms of Andalusia, and Assistant of Seville. His success in these important offices had excited admiration and gratitude, but at the same time envy, much more powerful than either of these sentiments, when a new opportunity of signalizing his zeal occurred to him. The King had formed a design worthy of his beneficence, of cultivating and peopling that part of Sierra Morena* which traverses the route from Madrid to Cadiz, a canton formerly inhabited and cultivated, but which was then over-run with wood, and which had become a place of shelter for robbers and wild

* Mountains of Andalusia in Spain.

beasts.

beasts. This business being entrusted to Mr. Olavidè, he accomplished it in the most satisfactory manner; but he could not avoid that misfortune which generally attends great enterprizes. His conduct upon that occasion offended several people, and among others Father Romuald, a German Capuchin, who had brought with him to Sierra Morena a patent from his general, by which he was declared Prefect of the new Missions, and of which he wished to avail himself, in order to assume unlimited authority in every thing which had even the smallest relation to religion. He, however, found great opposition from a Grand Vicar, to whom the Bishop of Jaen had delegated his powers in Sierra Morena, which was part of his diocese, and above all from Mr. Olavidè, who, in other respects, gave him a friendly reception, and admitted him into his familiarity. This did not prevent the disappointed ambition of the monk from being irritated. Some inconsiderate expressions which escaped from Mr. Olavidè, in those moments when he was off his guard, because he was not of a suspicious temper, served to awaken the ecclesiastic's resentment, which he disguised under the name of zeal for religion. He fomented the discontent of some of the new settlers, who were his countrymen, and made use of them to

discredit the establishment and its chief. The memoirs which they transmitted to the council of Castille, were filled with the severest accusations against Mr. Olavidè, and the council made them be examined by an impartial judge, and traced them to the corrupted source from which they had proceeded. Mr. Olavidè, nevertheless, who was continuing his operations with zeal, was suddenly ordered to court, in the month of November, 1775, in order to settle various matters relating to his mission.

Whilst he lived in Madrid in the most perfect security, chance discovered the odious plot which was forming against him. By letters which he intercepted, he discovered that Father Romuald had resolved to ruin him, that he might enrich himself at his expence, and that he flattered himself that a respectable court would favour his detestable machinations. The knowledge of these letters even reached the monarch, who referred the examination of them to one of his tribunals.

These, however, were not the only arms which the ambitious and revengful monk employed. Mr. Olavidè learnt from some friends, whom he had still left in Sierra Morena, that the preceding year Father Romuald had accused him to the minister for foreign affairs, of want of respect for
divine

divine worship, and ecclesiastical discipline in the new colony, and of having in his possession forbidden books, and that he had lately given information against him to the holy office.

However alarming these news were, Mr. Olavidè's conscience gave him every reason to be under no apprehensions. He continued at Madrid, and solicited the ministers to lay the proofs of his innocence at the foot of the throne, or at least to shew, that his long services, and the important affairs entrusted to him, gave him every claim to the indulgence of his sovereign. He presented himself several times to the Grand Inquisitor, with every demonstration of submission, protested the purity of his belief, and offered to retract any expressions which might have escaped from him to the prejudice of religion; but his offers and protestations were received with great coolness.

During near a year which he spent at Madrid, he observed the most exemplary conduct, hoping thus to prevent the expected storm, which, however, was not long in appearing. On the fourteenth of November, 1776, a grandee of Spain, in quality of *Alguasil*, *Mayor* of the Inquisition, accompanied by the ministers of justice, arrested him in his own house, and conveyed him to the

2

prison

prison of the holy office. From that moment he was, in a manner, lost to his wife, his friends, and his relations. Until the very day on which sentence was passed against him, they knew not what part of the world he inhabited, or whether he was in life, and all had renounced the hopes of ever seeing him again. At the same time his wife, at the place where she resided, saw the officers of the Inquisition seize all his effects, books, and papers, whilst another detachment did the same thing at his house in Seville. This event produced various sensations in Spain. The rivals of Mr. Olavidè, the enemies whom envy and ambition had raised up against him, and some enthusiasts, in their bitter zeal for the cause of God, considered it as a triumph. Several rigid citizens saw nothing in it, but a just punishment for the imprudences which they attributed to this illustrious criminal; but the most general sentiments were consternation and terror. Every one began to tremble for himself, and to be apprehensive of finding spies and accusers even in the most intimate connections.

Such were the sentiments inspired by terror during the detention of Mr. Olavidè. When one passes suddenly from a profound calm to the violent agitations of a storm, dangers appear to be

be magnified. The most intrepid minds are daunted by unexpected shocks, and the apparent quietness of the Inquisition had re-established security, when its sudden revival spread a general consternation. This first impression was besides prolonged by other circumstances. The monks imagined, that the moment was arrived, when they were to resume their empire. Scarcely was Mr. Olavidè arrested, when it was known that a mission of Capuchins at Seville had given themselves up to all the excesses of zeal, and that they were declaiming with great violence against the profane theatres, which he had endeavoured to bring to perfection in that city. In the mean time, the Inquisitions of the provinces were sharing in the triumphs of that capital, and making a trial of their rising forces. That of Cadiz was observed to renew a ceremony, which it had omitted for more than half a century, and which it repeated every year at Madrid, that of reading in the most solemn manner all the decrees of the holy office, the bulls upon which its power is founded, and all those anathemas which it thunders forth against the enemies of religion. It wished to give this ceremony all that formality which is calculated to strike the vulgar. It ordered an edict to be published, which enjoined all

the

the faithful above the age of ten years to assist at it, under the pain of excommunication. It appeared as if the holy office intended to insult the fears of the public.

The prosecution against Mr. Olavidè was carried on with the most profound secrecy, and his fate was at length decided, after a rigorous confinement of one year and seven days, during which he had not enjoyed the consolation of seeing even one of his servants.

On the twenty-first of November, 1777, an assembly was held in the interior hall of the Inquisition, to which were invited forty persons of different orders, among whom were several grantees of Spain, general officers, priests, and monks.

The sitting continued three days and a half, and the criminal appeared dressed in yellow, bearing in his hand a green wax taper, and assisted by two ministers of the holy office, while all the details of the process were read to him. The most interesting piece was a circumstantial relation which he himself made of his whole life. He there confessed, that in his travels he had frequented the company of freethinkers, particularly Voltaire and Rousseau, with whom he had discussed religious questions, without, however, suffering himself to be seduced by their arguments; that

that he returned into Spain with ideas not very favourable to the clergy, and persuaded that their privileges, and the opinions of the church of Rome, were injurious to the prosperity of states : that since he had presided over the new settlements at Sierra Morena, he had explained himself rashly and without reflection, respecting those obstacles which impeded their progress, and concerning the the infallibility of the Pope, and the tribunal of the Inquisition, but that all his expressions had not conveyed that meaning which those who heard them had thought proper to ascribe to them.

Next came the depositions of seventy-eight witnesses, who accused him of having often spoke the language of modern freethinkers, of having uttered blasphemies, and of having thrown ridicule upon the fathers of the church. Some of those charges the accused confessed, but he denied others, asserting that, in all cases, his words had not been expressive of his real sentiments ; that the object of some of them had been to animate to industry the new settlers, who often made the exterior practices of religion a pretence for idleness, and that in exclaiming against the inconveniencies of celibacy, he had in view the encouragement of population, so necessary to the prosperity of his country.

This

This attempt to exculpate himself appeared neither respectful nor conclusive. It was above all imputed to him as a great crime, that he made every effort he could to pervert the course of justice in the holy office ; to intercept its letters, and to prevail upon the witnesses, who were brought against him, to retract what they had said, and these accusations were proved by his own hand-writing.

In short the tribunal convicted him of all the crimes laid to his charge, and in consequence of this pronounced sentence against him, by which he was formally declared to be an *heretic*. He, however, interrupted the reading of this sentence, to disavow that appellation, and it was in this trying conjuncture that his constancy made its last effort. He fainted, and fell from the bench upon which he was seated, but having recovered his senses, the court ordered the remainder of it to be read. His goods were confiscated, he was declared incapable of holding any office, he was exiled to the distance of twenty leagues from Madrid, the royal palaces, Seville, the scene of his eclipsed authority, and from Lima, his native country, and was besides condemned to be shut up for eight years in a monastery, where he was to employ himself in reading such works of piety

as

as were pointed out to him, to do penance, and to confess once every month. He afterwards made a solemn abjuration, and was absolved from the censures he had incurred, with all the forms prescribed by the canons of the church. The assistants assert that he shewed the most unequivocal marks of resignation and repentance, and that they could not help pitying him for the moment.

It is pretended that the clemency of the sovereign, and if we can believe it, that of the Grand Inquisitor, moderated the rigour of his sentence; that some of the judges were for condemning him to death, and several for a public and severe punishment at the least; that the proposal for severity was supported above all by one of the courtiers, whose fanatical zeal for the cause of God, made him believe that amends ought to be made for scandal, by some striking example. It is, however, very difficult to give the secret details of this event. Fear had repressed indiscretion on the one side, and curiosity on the other. A conjecture or a question might have been wrongly interpreted, and might have been attended with the most serious consequences to its author. To be silent appeared to be the safest plan, and people were in that situation which is so well described

described in a few words by Tacitus, in his life of Agricola, *adempto per inquisitiones et loquendi audiendique commercio.*

We must, however, confess, much to the honour of the Spanish nation, that this crisis was not of long duration. The minds of the people began to be at ease, when they reflected upon the goodness of the sovereign, and the wisdom of his ministers. The circumstances even in which the victim, who had been just sacrificed, found himself, contributed to dissipate the terror of the public. His talents and success had attracted the notice of envy, before it excited the animadversion of the holy office; and the people, become more calm, hoped that their obscurity would shield them from the severity of this tribunal. The consequences proved that it was only temporary, and that milder principles prevailed in his Majesty's cabinet.

Mr. Olavidè began, however, to undergo his sentence; he was shut up in a convent in La Mancha, but having soon after pleaded the loss of his health, he obtained permission to go and drink the mineral waters in the neighbourhood, and as he did not find that benefit from them which he expected, he was allowed to seek for others in Catalonia, which might be of more service to him.

him. If the same severity which dictated his sentence, had presided over the execution of it, he would have been deprived of every opportunity of availing himself of the proximity of the frontiers. He easily eluded the vigilance of his keepers, and bidding adieu to his country, which he still loved, escaped to France, where his reputation was before known, where he was received as the martyr of persecution, and where, under the name of Count de Pilos, he leads a calm life ; endeavouring, in the company of men of letters, in the intimacy of valuable friends, whom his talents have procured him, and in a moderate enjoyment of the pleasures of the capital, to console himself for the loss of his credit and places, and for what he feels still more heavily, an exile which removes him for ever from the sight of his fellow citizens and relations. It has been asserted, that the court of Spain demanded him of the court of France ; but that the latter, without pretending to assert that France would, without distinction, give shelter to all those who might be proscribed by an allied nation, represented in an amicable mannner to the court of Madrid, that Mr. Olavidè's crimes were not of that kind which rendered it necessary for polished nations mutually to agree to deliver up their authors. It is added,
that

that the court of Madrid, the severity of which is not implacable, and which, as they say, yielded only to the momentary impulse of a persecuting spirit, which it does not really possess, did not persist in its demand.

Since this event the Inquisition has once justified those apprehensions which it excited. Toleration, which is so intimately connected with humanity, beheld with indignation the punishment of a poor woman, who, convicted of *forcery* and *witchcraft*, was burnt at Seville, in 1780, by a sentence of this tribunal. In other respects, it has not exercised its authority, but at long intervals, upon some few individuals, who having been convicted of expressions injurious to religion, have escaped, after having retracted what they said, and submitted to a slight penance.

In the year 1784, at the time I was at Madrid, a scene took place, which proves that this tribunal, notwithstanding the terror which its forms will always inspire, is sometimes less severe than many secular tribunals. A mendicant, who had taken up his station at the door of a church, employed his leisure in inventing and vending a kind of powder, to which he ascribed marvellous qualities. He composed it of certain ingredients, which could not be mentioned without making
the

the reader blush ; he devised certain ridiculous formulæ, which it was necessary to pronounce in using this remedy, and required his patients to assume postures easier to be imagined than described, in order that it might produce its effect. It was something of the nature of those love potions, in the power of which our ignorant ancestors for a long time confided, and had the property, according to the account of this impostor, of securing the affections of a lover, and melting the heart of the most obdurate female. Every thing that flatters our passions, is the object of our credulity. The impostor did not fail to find customers among that class over whom the marvellous has always great influence. Some success produced by chance, raised the reputation of his receipt, and he took care to spread it, by associating himself with some women of the town. His powders, however, as may be readily supposed, were often employed without effect ; but the greater part of his dupes, perhaps, from motives of shame, observed silence ; some, however, at length, made the affair public, and their complaints having reached the holy office, the mendicant and his accomplices were arrested and conveyed to the Inquisition, where they were tried according to all the established forms. The impudent

pudent empiric, in his examination, made a full confession ; he explained the composition of his powders, and gave up his prescription and receipt. The result was one of the most singular processes ever heard in a court of justice. The day of vengeance at length arrived. The judges, the criminals, and an immense croud of spectators of both sexes, and of all classes, assembled in the church of the Dominicans at Madrid. Divine service, which had been interrupted by the reading of this strange process, was performed, and it was considered as no profanation of the house of God, to make its walls resound with a detail of those obscene expressions which were contained in it. Such were the laws of the holy office, from which no deviation was made, even in favour of young ladies of quality, who were obliged to conceal their embarrassment behind their fans. Nay more, those religious females who paid less regard to their scruples than to the privileges of their church, lost no part of the ceremony, and their chaste ears listened with attention to this scandalous relation.

When mass was finished, sentence was pronounced and executed. It declared the mendicant guilty, and convicted of fraud, profanation, and imposture, and condemned him to be imprisoned

soned for life, after having been whipped through the principal streets of the city. Two women, his accomplices, were treated with more indulgence. Soon after the three criminals were brought forth from the church of the Dominicans, mounted upon asses and cloathed each in a *sambenito*, covered with devils, and other symbolical figures. — On their heads they wore the fatal pyramidical cap named *coroza*, which has too much resemblance, perhaps, to the pontifical mitre. The man was naked from the middle, and discovered to the eyes of the spectators such good bodily condition, as could be attributed only to the sale of his powders. The procession was opened by the Marquis of Cogolludo, eldest son of the Duke de Medina Celi, who, in quality of Alguazil, (Mayor), presided over the ceremony. He was followed by several of the grandees of Spain, intimately connected with the holy office, and by other officers belonging to that tribunal. A crowd of people, whom curiosity had collected, filled every window and inundated every street. The triumphal entry of a hero returning to his country, after having saved it, could not have been more pompous, than a ceremony, the object of which was a contemptible criminal; but this spectacle had not, like many others of the same kind, any thing

in it that could give pain to sensibility. Never was a merited sentence executed with more mildness. Every now and then the mendicant stopped, the executioner gave him a few slight strokes with his whip, and immediately some charitable hand presented him a glass of Spanish wine to revive his strength; and enable him to undergo the remainder of his punishment. It is much to be wished, that the holy office had never exercised greater severity.

In reality, this tribunal is far from being so formidable as is still believed in foreign nations. Its forms, indeed, are sufficient to alarm even those who confide in its justice. The prosecution of the accused must be carried on with the greatest secrecy, and the advocate allowed them for their defence, must not confer with them, but in the presence of the inquisitors; but what is most detestable of all is, that when they communicate to them the depositions, which have been made against them, they conceal the authors of them with the utmost care. Notwithstanding all this, I will venture to assert, that excepting its form of procedure, the inquisition in the present day may be cited as a model of equity, and even of moderation. It takes every possible measure to ascertain the truth of those depositions which it receives,
and

and it never condemns any person on the testimony of one witness, and without examining those proofs which are brought to substantiate accusations. To incur its censure one must have been guilty of great and repeated faults. With a little circumspection in one's words and conduct, respecting religion, one may live as happily in Spain as in any country in Europe. The indiscreet zeal of some of the commissaries of the inquisition, disturbs, indeed, in certain places, the repose of the inhabitants, by visiting their houses to condemn licentious paintings and prohibited books; but this zeal is always checked by the court, or the Grand Inquisitor, whose office in the present reign has been entrusted to wise and enlightened prelates only.

I was told at Cadiz, that a French commercial house, having received a quantity of leather, of French manufacture, was very much alarmed on being visited by the ministers of the holy office. These ministers requested to see the leather which had lately arrived, and having remarked that it was stamped with the figure of the Virgin Mary, which was the particular mark of the manufactory from which it had been brought, they exclaimed loudly against this profanation; they pretended that these hides being for the purpose of making

Q 2

shoes,

shoes, the image of the mother of God ran a great risk of being trodden under foot, and on that account they confiscated them. This affair was referred to the supreme tribunal at Madrid, and the leather was sent thither ; but the merchants, who were alarmed for their property, having made application to the court, through the medium of their ambassador, the complaint was received in the manner in which it ought. The officers of the inquisition were ordered not to molest strangers upon such frivolous pretences, and the merchants recovered both their property and their former tranquillity.

On other occasions, still more recent, the ministry and the Grand Inquisitor himself, have protected the oppression of the subaltern officers of the holy office. In a city of Andalusia, they wished to disturb a French house, because they were Protestants, and when it was objected that the English, and people of other northern nations, were tolerated in Spain, though heretics, they replied, that no other religion but the Catholic was known in France. The case of this persecuted house was no sooner represented at court, than it found protection.

In short, supposing there were really more persecution in the provinces than in the capital, it

can never be attended with great inconveniences, because every sentence of the provincial tribunals is of no force until it has obtained the sanction of that of Madrid, which, on this account, is called *suprema*. Besides, the court at present takes more concern than ever in the administration of the holy office, and this undoubtedly not with a view to increase its severity. In 1784, a regulation was made that when any grandee of Spain, any of his Majesty's ministers, any officer of his troops, and, in a word, any person in place, should be prosecuted, the whole process should be laid before the King, in order to be revised and examined. The principal citizens have therefore obtained by this law, one more safeguard against the rigours of the inquisition; but it is much to be regretted, that it is granted only to those classes who can never want protection, rather than to those whose obscurity often renders their complaints ineffectual, and who consequently may more easily be treated with injustice. The people almost every where are in turns oppressed and neglected by the laws, because they have no share in the formation of them.

The holy office still remains in possession of a duty which it exacts in the sea ports from every vessel that enters them, on account of a visit which

it is authorized to make, in order to be assured that they contain nothing which may give offence to religion. For a long time this visit has been given up, but the duty continues to be levied.

CHAP. CXLI.

OF THE BIGOTRY OF THE SPANIARDS.

IT is said that the Spaniards (being a mixed people) descending from the Goths, Moors, Jews, and ancient Spaniards, borrowed superstition from the Jews, melancholy from the Moors, pride from the Goths, and from the original natives, a desire and thirst of the first of all earthly blessings—*Liberty*. One instance of their pride may be seen in Berkley's *Icon Animarum*, who says, that a cobbler being upon his death bed, gave in charge to his eldest son, above all things, to endeavour to preserve and retain the majesty of so great a family.

The common people are the greatest bigots in the world. They do not look upon an Englishman as a Christian; and the life of a man, not a Christian,

Christian, is of no more importance in their eyes, than the life of a dog. It is not therefore safe for a Protestant to trust himself far from the maritime cities, as an hundred unforeseen incidents may arise, among people so ignorant and superstitious, to render it very unsafe for a man, known to be a Protestant. If it be asked how the consuls, English merchants, &c, escape? I can give no other reason than what a Spaniard gave me, when I put that question to him: "Sir," said he, "we have men here, who are Protestants all day, and Papists all night; and we have chapels where they go, into which no other people are admitted." However, I was convinced, before I went into Spain this time, from what I remembered formerly, that it was so necessary to appear a good Catholic, that I always carried a little crucifix or two, some beads, and other *accidental* marks of my faith; and where I staid any time, or, indeed, where I slept upon the road, I took occasion to let some of those *powerful protectors* be seen, as it were by chance. It is very necessary to avail one's self of such innocent frauds, in a country where innocence itself may not be sufficient to shield you from religious bigotry, and where people think they are serving God, by destroying men.

I really thought, that philosophy and reason entered into Spain by the same gates at which the Jesuits were turned out of the kingdom; and, I suppose, some did; but it must be many years before it is sufficiently diffused over the whole nation, to render it a country like France, where men, who behave with decency and decorum, may live, or pass through, without the least apprehension or inconvenience on the score of religion, if they do not meddle with politics or fortifications.

That you may not imagine my suspicions of the danger of passing through Spain are ill founded, I will relate what happened to two English gentlemen of fashion at *Murcia* as I had it from the mouth of one of them lately. They had procured letters of recommendation from some friends to the *Alguazil*, or chief magistrate of the town; and as there were some unfavourable appearances at their first entering *Murcia*, they thought it right to send their letters directly to the *Alguazil*, who, instead of asking them to his house, or visiting them, sent a servant to say he was ill, and who was directed to invite them to go that night to the comedy. They thought it right, however, to accept the invitation, extraordinary as it was. The *Alguazil's*

Alguazil's servant conducted them to the theatre, and paid, (being directed so to do) for their admittance. He conducted his strangers into the pit, and retired. The comedy was then begun; but, nevertheless, the eyes of the whole house were turned upon them, and their's, to their great astonishment, upon the *sick Alguazil* with his whole family. Those near whom they stood, retired to some distance. They could not, he said, consider the manner in which they were looked at, and retired from, but to arise from disgust or dislike, more than from curiosity. This reception, and the manner in which they had been sent there, deprived them of all the amusement the house afforded; for though the performers had no great excellence, there was, among the female part of the audience, more beauty than they expected.—Mr. B——, one of the gentlemen, at length discovered near him in the pit, a man whom he knew to be an Irishman, and in whose countenance he plainly perceived a desire to speak, but seemed with-held by prudence. At length, however, he got near enough to his countryman, to hear him say, without appearing to address himself to any body, "Go hence! go hence." They did so; and the next morning, though it was a fine town, which they wished to examine, and to

spend some time in, set off early for Carthagena, where they had some particular friends, to whom they related the *Alguazil's* very extraordinary behaviour, as well as that of the company at the theatre. It was near the time of the carnival at Carthagena. The conduct of Don Marco to the two gentlemen strangers, became the subject of conversation, and indeed of indignation among the Spaniards of that civilized city, and the *Alguazil*, who came to the carnival there soon after, died by the Hands of an assassin; he was stabbed by a mask in the night. Now suppose this man lost his life at *Carthagena* for his ill behaviour to the two strangers at *Murcia*, or for any other cause, it is very certain, if natives are so liable to assassination, strangers are not very secure.

To give you some idea of the address of the pulpit oratory in Spain, about sixty or seventy years ago, (and it is not, in general, much better at present) take the following specimen, which I assure you is strictly true:—

A preacher holding forth in the place called Las Manzanas, at Madrid, after informing his auditors of the sufferings of Jesus Christ, added, “ And is it not strange, that we still continue to sin on and live without repentance? O Lord

God! said he, why sufferest thou such ungrateful and wretched finners to live?"—And instantly giving himself a violent box on the ear, the whole assembly followed his example, and four thousand *soufflets* were given and received in the twinkling of an eye. A French Ambassador, from whose memoirs I take this story, was upon that instant bursting out in laughter, at the pious ceremony, had he not been checked by one of his friends, who happened to stand near, and who assured him, that neither his rank nor character would have saved him, had he been so indiscreet; for the enraged populace would have cut him in a thousand pieces! Whereupon he hid his face in his handkerchief, and boxed his own ears more for the love of himself, than from any religious motive.

C H A P. CXLII.

COMPARISON BETWEEN THE INHABITANTS OF
THE SOUTHERN AND NORTHERN CLIMATES.

GIRONE is a fortified city, and well built, but every house has the appearance of a convent; I was going to say a gaol. I went to the mar-

ket in the morning, where fruit, flesh, and vegetables were to be sold in abundance; but instead of that noise which French and English markets abound with, a general silence and gravity reigned throughout, which can hardly be thought possible, where so many buyers and sellers were collected together. There I bought a basket of figs, but the vender of them spoke to me as softly as if we had been engaged in a conspiracy, yet she did not attempt to impose; I dare say she asked me no more than she would have demanded of a Spaniard. The manners of people are certainly infectious; my spirits sunk in this town, and I wanted nothing but the Catalan language, and a long cloak, to make me a compleat Spaniard. Our inn was the Golden Fountain, and considering it was in *Spain*, not a bad one. If the town, however, was gloomy, the country round about it exhibited all the beauties nature can any where boast of.

In climates, says some writer, where the earth seems to be the pride and master-piece of nature, rags and dirt, and ghastly countenances, and misery under every form, are oftener met with than in those countries less favoured by nature; and the forlorn and wretched condition of the people in general seems to belie and disgrace

grace their native soil. Certain it is, that the natives of the southern parts of Europe, have neither the beauty, strength, nor comeliness of men born in more northern climates. I have seen, in the south of France, in Spain, and in Portugal, the aged, especially of both sexes, who hardly appeared human ! Nor do you see, in general, even among the youthful, much more beauty than that which youth alone must give, for youth is beauty. Whoever compares the natives of Switzerland, England, Ireland, and Scotland, with those of Spain, Portugal, or other climates, will find, that men born among cold, bleak mountains, are infinitely superior to those of the finest climates under the sun. Perhaps, however, this difference may arise more from the want of liberty, than the power of climate. Oh Liberty ! sweet Liberty ! without thee life cannot be enjoyed ! Thou parent of comfort, whose children bless thee, though they dwell among the barren rocks, or the most furly regions of the earth ! Thou blestest in spite of nature ; and, in spite of nature, tyranny brings curses.

“ O LIBERTY ! thou Goddess heavenly bright,

“ Profuse of bliss, and pregnant with delight ;

“ Eternal

" Eternal Pleasures in thy presence reign,
 " And siniling plenty leads thy wanton train;
 " Eas'd of her load, subjection grows more light,
 " And poverty looks cheerful in thy sight.
 " Thou mak'st the gloomy face of nature gay,
 " Giv'st beauty to the sun, and pleasure to the
 " day."

FINIS.



B O O K S

LATELY PUBLISHED BY

G. KEARSLEY,

AT JOHNSON'S HEAD, FLEET STREET, LONDON:

Of whom may be had all the Publications of Merit.

Ornamented with five new plates, from the designs of Mr. Nixon.

The eleventh edition of

T H E B E A U T I E S O F S T E R N E.

Calculated for the heart of sensibility.

This volume contains a pleasing selection from the works of that elegant writer; among which are, the Story of Le Fever and Uncle Toby, Maria, Shandy's Bed of Justice, Yorick's Horse, Corporal Trim's Brother, the Dwarf, the Pulse, the Pye Man, the Sword, the Supper, the Starling, the Ass, Dr. Slop and Obadiah, Dr. Slop and Susan, &c. &c.

Also several of his most celebrated Sermons, elegant Sentiments, and familiar Letters to his Friends.

Price three shillings and six-pence sewed.

In justice to the selector of the beauties, it must be admitted, he has properly discriminated, though it was somewhat difficult what to reject. Notwithstanding ten editions of this very entertaining work have been published, yet the present appears to have received very considerable additions and improvements; being enriched by a variety of anecdotes and observations on life, a few of his best sermons, and several elegant extracts. The essence of the immortal Sterne may be said to be comprised in this volume.

Vide the Review for March, 1788.

Ornamented

Ornamented with plates, and improved by a considerable number of the most admired scenes in Othello, Romeo and Juliet, King Lear, Julius Cæsar, Macbeth, Timon of Athens, Henry the Fourth, Fifth, Sixth, and Eighth, Richard the Third, Hamlet, &c. &c.

The BEAUTIES OF SHAKESPEARE.

Alphabetically digested, with a copious Index.

To which is added his LIFE, and a Medallion of his Profile, and GARRICK's, in shade.

Price three shillings, sewed.

The BEAUTIES of the SPECTATOR, TATLER, GUARDIAN, RAMBLER, ADVENTURER, CONNOISSEUR, WORLD, and IDLER.

* * To accommodate the Purchasers of these entertaining volumes, they are sold together, or in the following manner :

The selections from the SPECTATOR, TATLER, and the GUARDIAN, are comprized in the two first volumes, and sold separate for six shillings.

The third and fourth volumes contain those from the Rambler, Connoisseur, Adventurer, World, and Idler, and are sold separate for six shillings also, or the four volumes for twelve shillings, complete.

A new edition, being the *Seventh*, of

The BEAUTIES of Dr. SAMUEL JOHNSON,

Consisting of Maxims and Observations, moral, critical, and miscellaneous. To which are now added, BIOGRAPHICAL ANECDOTES, selected from the late productions of Mrs. Piozzi, Mr. Boswell, and other authentic testimonies.

This edition is embellished with an etching of the head of Dr. Johnson, taken from the life, about a month before his death.

Price only three shillings and six-pence, sewed.

In this edition the two volumes are comprized in one.

Continental

Continental Excursions.

In a pocket volume, with a correct MAP of the ROUTES of the POSTS and PUBLIC CARRIAGES, correctly engraved from one just published by authority at Paris.

A New Edition of

The GENTLEMAN's GUIDE in his TOUR through FRANCE.

Containing observations on every curious and interesting object, the Expence of Travelling in a Post Chaise, Stage Coach, or inland Water Carriage. The Distances of the Towns, and the best Houses of Accommodation. Also, an Account of the Products and Manufactories; with Mr. Neckar's Account of the Finances. The different Coins are here reduced to English Money.

Price 3s. 6d.

It may also be had at Dover, Margate, Weymouth, and Brighton.

A TOUR through HOLLAND, DUTCH BRABANT, the AUSTRIAN NETHERLANDS, and part of FRANCE.

In which is included a description of Paris and its environs.

With an accurate Map of the Low Countries.

By the late HARRY PECKHAM, Esq.

One of his Majesty's Counsel, and Recorder of the City of Chichester.

The 4th edition, price 3s. 6d. half-bound.

TOUR of ITALY, with a Map, 4s. 6d.

TOUR of SWITZERLAND,

Including M. De SAUSURE's Account of his Expedition to the summit of MOUNT BLANC, which has been often attempted, but never before accomplished, with a Map, 2s. 6d.

Each of these TOURS contains all the Information that can be useful to TRAVELLERS, and entertaining to READERS; among which are the expences upon the road, regulated by the mode of travelling. The different coins of each country are also explained.

The

The Fourth Edition, much enlarged,

(Ornamented with a considerable number of new plates, containing several views in the newly discovered islands, fundry animals, an exact representation of an Human Sacrifice, Captain Cook's head from Pinó's medal, and a chart of the new discoveries with the tracks of the ships)

A COMPLETE ABRIDGMENT of Captain COOK's VOYAGES round the WORLD;

Containing a faithful account of all the discoveries with the transactions at each place, a description of the inhabitants with their manners and customs, a full detail of the circumstances relative to Captain Cook's death, and an account of his life by Captain King.

Those who superintend the education of youth of either sex cannot put into their hands a more acceptable work, for the amusement of leisure hours, than these late voyages of discovery, which abound with matter highly interesting and entertaining.

In two volumes. Price eight shillings in boards.

* * * Either volume may be had separate. Price four shillings.

A JOURNEY through SWEDEN;

Containing a particular account of its Population, Customs, and Manners of its Inhabitants, Agriculture, Commerce, and Finances.

To which is added,

An ABRIDGED HISTORY of the KINGDOM,

And its different forms of Government, from the Accession of GUSTAVUS the FIRST, in 1553, to the year 1786; with some particulars relative to the DANISH COURT, from the year 1772, and to the Life of the unfortunate

COUNT STRUENSEE.

Translated from the French.

Price five shillings in boards.

The BRITISH CHRONOLOGIST;

Comprehending every material occurrence relating to GREAT BRITAIN, from the invasion of the Romans to the present time; with the prices of the various articles of provision at different periods. Also a complete Index.

In three large octavo volumes. Price one guinea bound.

The

LOVE and MADNESS.

A story too true.

The fourth edition, with improvements.

Price four shillings, fewed.

This book was sold for half a guinea before this improved edition was published.

The VIRTUOSI's MUSEUM;

A Collection of elegant Views, in ENGLAND, SCOTLAND,
and WALES; engraved from the drawings of

PAUL SANDBY, Esq. R. A.

With descriptions to each plate; of which there are one hundred
and eight.

Price Five Pounds Thirteen Shillings, half-bound.

The following entertaining Selections by the 'Rev. JOHN ADAMS, A. M. are calculated for the instruction as well as entertainment of youth. The whole nine volumes, one pound seven shillings and sixpence; or they are sold separately for three shillings each.

Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci.

HOR.

The FLOWERS of ANCIENT and MODERN HISTORY;

Comprehending, on a new plan, the most remarkable and interesting events, as well as ancient and modern characters; designed for the improvement and entertainment of youth. 6s.

Two volumes.

The FLOWERS of MODERN TRAVELS;

Being elegant, entertaining, and instructive extracts, selected from the works of the most celebrated travellers, such as Lord Lyttelton, Sir W. Hamilton, Baron de Tott, Dr. Johnson, Dr. Moore, Dr. Troil, Addison, Bridgeman, Coke, Wrayall, Savary, Topham, Sherlock, Douglas, Lady M. W. Montague, &c. &c. intended chiefly for young people of both sexes. 3s.

Two volumes.

MODERN

MODERN VOYAGES;

Containing a Variety of useful and entertaining Facts respecting the EXPEDITIONS, and the principal Discoveries of

CAVENDISH,	WALLIS,	PORTLOCK,
DAMPIER,	CARTERET,	PATERSON,
ANSON,	BOUGANVILLE,	And others,
BYRON,	DIXON,	

Comprehending, The latest authentic Accounts from BOTANY BAY;—the most interesting Particulars of BRISSON's Narrative of his Shipwreck and Captivity; the Shipwreck of the ANTELOPE, East India Packet, and a Description of the amiable Inhabitants of the PELEW ISLANDS, never before known to any European;—also curious Information from several ingenious Writers and Travellers.

For the Amusement and Instruction of Youth of both Sexes. 6s.

Two volumes.

ANECDOTES, BON MOTS, and CHARACTERISTIC TRAITS,

Of the greatest princes, politicians, philosophers, poets, orators, and wits of modern times; such as the Emperor Charles V. King of Prussia, Peter the Great, Henry IV. Charles XII. Lewis XIV. Voltaire, Dryden, Swift, Lord Mansfield, Garrick, and Dr. Johnson. 4s.

One volume.

CURIOUS THOUGHTS ON MAN;

Chiefly abridged or selected from the celebrated works of Lord KAIMES, Lord MONRODDE, Dr. DUNBAR, the immortal MONTESQUIEU, Dr. GOLDSMITH, and others, replete with useful and entertaining instruction on a variety of important subjects; including the resemblance between the faculties of brutes and the human species, particularly the ORANOUTANG.

Social Nature of Man, Population, Manners, Origin of Love, the Female Sex, Love in the East, Love in the North, Marriage Ceremonies, Cruelty, Unnatural Customs, Aversions, Coaches, Houses and Furniture, Eating and Drinking, Commerce, Government, Agriculture, Peace and War, Music, Gaming, Luxury, &c. &c.

Designed to promote a spirit of enquiry in youth; and to make the history of the human species familiar to ordinary capacities. 3s.

"The proper study of mankind is man."

Pope.

One volume.

The

THE ENGLISH PARNASSUS;

Being a new selection of didactic, descriptive, pathetic, plaintive, and pastoral poetry, extracted from the works of the latest and most celebrated Poets; such as Doctors Beattie, Johnson, Hawkefworth, Olgilvie, Goldsmith, and Young; Mrs. Barbauld, Miss Falconer, Miss More, Miss Carter, Hon. C. J. Fox, Churchill, Cooper, Hayley, Warton, Crabbe, Fitzgerald, Burns, Thurston, Pratt, Renwick, Hartson, Skinner, Jerminham, Hudson, Pope, Thomson, Philips, Blair, &c. &c.

One volume.

A DOSE for the DOCTORS, or

THE ÆSCULAPIAN LABYRINTH EXPLORED;

In a series of instructions to young Physicians, Surgeons, Accouchers, Apothecaries, Druggists, and Practitioners of every denomination, in town and country. Interspersed with a variety of risible anecdotes, affecting the FACULTY.

Inscribed to the COLLEGE of WIGS.

By GREGORY GLYSTER, an old Practitioner.

“Twenty more, kill them too!” Bobadil.

Price three shillings and six-pence.

A NEW COLLECTION;

In four volumes 8vo.

Price 1l. 8s. bound, or 1l. 4s. in boards,

ORIGINAL PRECEDENTS in CONVEYANCING;

Settled and approved by the most eminent Conveyancers; interspersed with the observations and opinions of Counsel upon various intricate cases.

The whole selected from the drafts of actual practice, and now first published under the immediate inspection of

THOMAS WALTER WILLIAMS,

Of the Inner Temple,

BARRISTER AT LAW.

Useful

Useful principally to Magistrates and Lawyers.

A new edition, corrected and enlarged, of

A COMPENDIOUS DIGEST of the STATUTE LAW,

Comprising the substance and effect of all the public Acts of Parliament in force from Magna Charta to the present time.

By **THOMAS WALTER WILLIAMS**, of the Inner Temple,
Barrister at Law.

Price thirteen shillings bound.

(With a PORTRAIT of the AUTHOR, by WALKER)

The eleventh edition, enlarged by a supplement, containing practical observations upon thorn wounds and punctured tendons.

The GENTLEMAN'S STABLE DIRECTORY;

Or, MODERN SYSTEM OF FARRIERY;

Comprehending every useful instruction for Equestrian management in sickness or in health; diseases are traced to their origin, and the causes explained; proper modes of prevention are particularly pointed out, and the direct methods of cure clearly confirmed. Occasional observations are introduced upon the erroneous treatment, and almost obsolete prescriptions of Gibson, Bracken, Bartlet, Osmer, and others; with general directions for buying and selling, feeding, bleeding, purging and getting into condition, for their various purposes, horses of every denomination.

To which are now added,

Applicable and Experimental Remarks upon the proper treatment of draught horses, the qualifications and dangerous practice of country farriers, and the destructive insatiation of farmers servants.

By **WILLIAM TAPLIN**, Surgeon.

To this edition is annexed,

A list of genuine and approved Horse Medicines, prepared at the Dispensary of the Author.

Sold by the publisher, and one agent in most cities and principal towns in England.

Mrs. COLZ is evidently a well informed woman in the art of Cookery; her treatise appears to be very carefully executed, and will prove highly useful. She has likewise given instructions for brewing in all its branches; besides a marketing table, another for buying

buying and selling, and a specimen of a house-keeping book. An extensive collection of family prescriptions from Doctors Buchan, Fothergill, Elliot, Tissot, and other eminent physicians, is also added.

For the above character of Mrs. Cole's excellent collection of receipts in cookery, confectionary, &c. &c. See last Appendix to Critical Review.

This Book is called

**The LADY'S COMPLETE GUIDE;
OF, COOKERY and CONFECTIONARY in all their
Branches.**

Of which there have been two editions already.

The whole forming the most complete system ever yet exhibited, under every head, viz.

Roasting—boiling—made dishes of beef, mutton, veal, lamb, pork, &c.—Dressing all sorts of poultry, wild fowl, and game—turtle and mock turtle—soups, gravies, and broths—fricacies—fish in various ways—sauces of every sort—pickling, preserving, pott-ing and collaring—pastry of every sort—confectionary—elegant small savory dishes for suppers—bills of fare throughout the year—a monthly list of things in season—ornaments for grand entertainments—possets—gruels—white-pots—making bacon and hams—dressing all kinds of vegetables—several excellent cordials—variety of made wines and cyder.

By Mrs. MARY COLE,

Cook to the Right Hon. the EARL of DROGHEDA.

To which is added, in order to render it as perfect as possible,

The COMPLETE BREWER;

Containing familiar instructions for brewing all sorts of beer and ale, and managing the cellar.

Also, The FAMILY PHYSICIAN;

Comprehending a considerable collection of approved prescriptions for almost every common complaint, by Mead, Sydenham, Tissot, Fothergill, Elliot, Buchan, and others.

The third Edition. Price seven shillings bound.

WOMAN.

W O M A N.

Sketches of the *History, Genius, Disposition, Accomplishments, Customs* Importance of the FAIR SEX, in all Parts of the World.

Illustrated with singular Anecdotes, and entertaining Narratives, supported by Authority.

By A FRIEND TO THE SEX.

"*Nature made you to temper Man.*" OTWAY.

One volume. Price three shillings.

The Third Edition, with considerable Additions,
With a Portrait, from a painting by GAINSBOROUGH,
The LIFE of the late DUCHESS of KINGSTON,
During her connection with the Duke, her residence at Dresden,
Vienna, St. Peterburgh, Versailles, and several other courts of
Europe; also a faithful copy of her singular Will.

Price three shillings and sixpence.

The FOURTH EDITION, improved and enlarged, with a copious
Index, containing above one thousand articles.

The GARDENER'S POCKET CALENDAR;

On a new plan, alphabetically arranged, with the necessary directions for keeping a Garden in proper order at a small expence, and for raising Flowers in every month of the year. Also, for cultivating Vegetables, for the use of an army in camp or garrison.

By RICHARD WESTON, Esq.

Price two shillings and sixpence sewed.

The POEMS of Mr. GRAY;

With Notes by Gilbert Wakefield, B. A. late Fellow of Jesus
College, Cambridge.

*Ingenium cui fit, cui mens diviniore, atque os
Magna sonaturum, des nominis hujus honorem.*

Horat.

Creative Genius; and the glow divine,
That warms and melts the enthusiastic soul;
A pomp and prodigality of praise:
These form the poet, and these shine in thee!

Price four shillings in boards.

